



# VISITOR'S GUIDE TO SALEM



The Essex Institute.



East India  
Marine  
Hall.



The Witch House.



Nathaniel  
Hawthorne



Pickering House.

PUBLISHED BY THE  
ESSEX INSTITUTE

PRICE \$1.25

F  
74  
.S1  
H934  
1953

THE HISTORICAL COLLECTIONS  
of the  
ESSEX INSTITUTE



Historical, Genealogical and Antiquarian

Published quarterly, each volume containing over four  
hundred pages with an exhaustive index  
and numerous illustrations.

---

Volume I—LXXXVIII [1859-1952]

Subscription \$3.00 per annum

Price for complete set on application

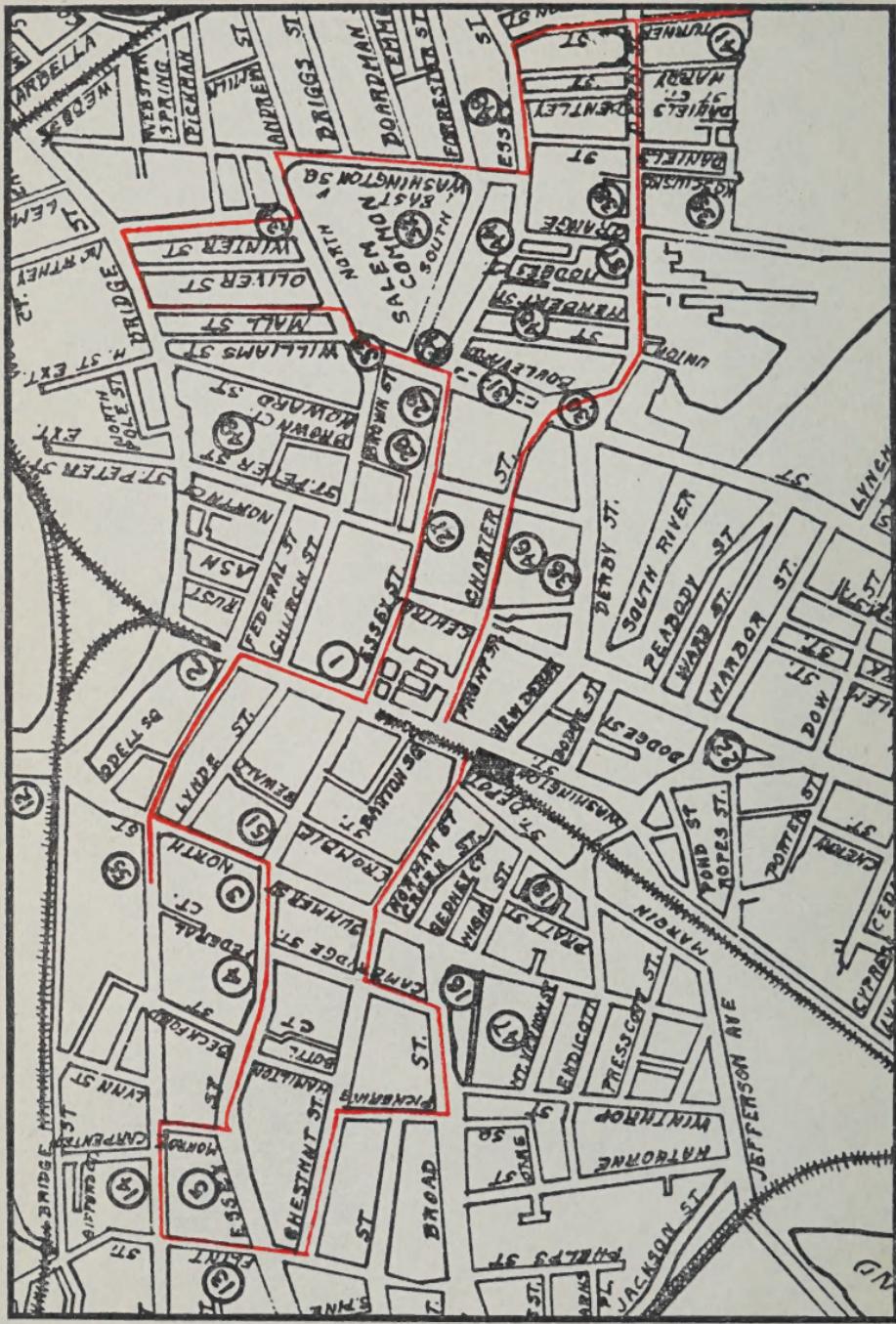
---

SEND FOR CATALOGUE OF PUBLICATIONS

---

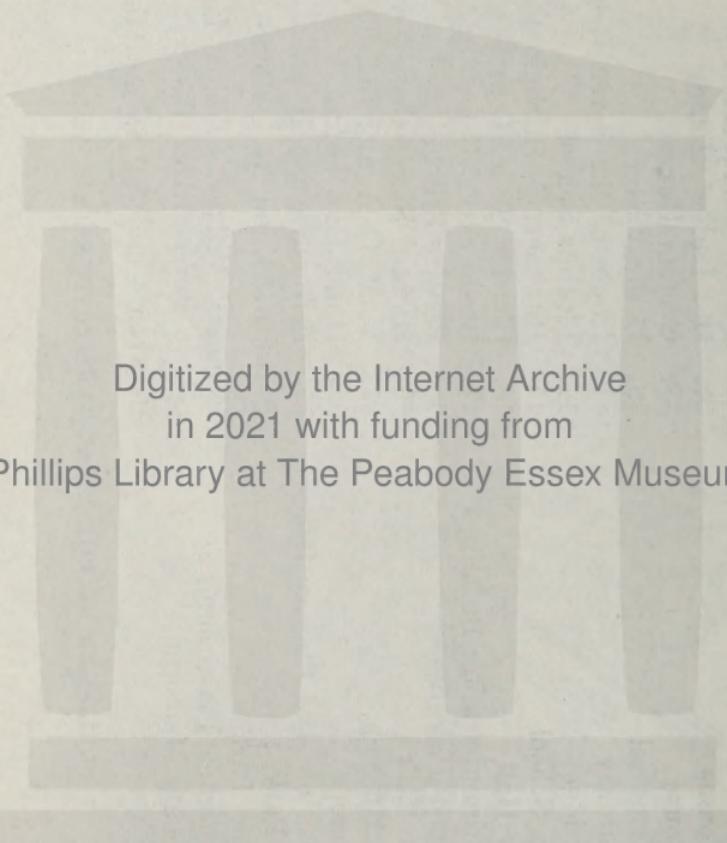
THE ESSEX INSTITUTE, SALEM, MASS.





1. City Hall
2. Court Houses
3. Witch House
4. Ropes Memorial
5. Public Library
12. North Bridge
13. Bowditch School
14. Assembly Hall
16. School Administration Buildings
19. High Street Playground
22. Lafayette Park
27. Peabody Museum
28. State Armory
29. Essex Institute and Pingree House
30. Bertram Park
31. Hawthorne Park
32. Salem Common Playground
33. Roger Conant Memorial
34. Merritt Triangle
36. Police Headquarters
37. Old Ladies' Home
38. Custom House
39. Derby Wharf
41. House of the Seven Gables
44. Phillips School
45. Hawthorne's Birthplace
46. Charter Street Cemetery
47. Broad Street Cemetery
48. Bentley School
49. Howard Street Cemetery
51. Y. M. C. A. and Bell Tablet
54. Hotel Hawthorne
55. Peirce-Nichols House
- Between 33 and 34. Home for Aged Men.
- Pioneers' Village. Follow Lafayette Street to Forest River Park.
- Between 4 and 5. Salem Athenæum.

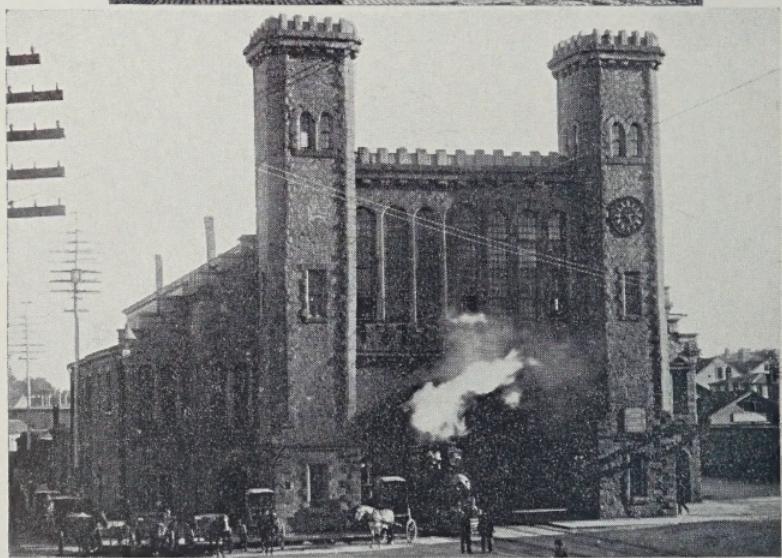
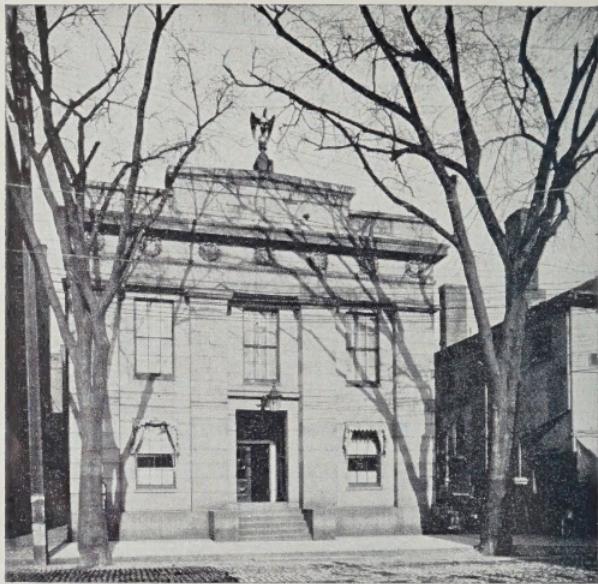
PUBLISHED BY THE ESSEX INSTITUTE, SALEM, MASS.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2021 with funding from  
Phillips Library at The Peabody Essex Museum

[https://archive.org/details/visitorsguidetos00esse\\_1](https://archive.org/details/visitorsguidetos00esse_1)





CITY HALL

BOSTON & MAINE RAILROAD STATION

# VISITOR'S GUIDE

TO

# SALEM

---

REVISED EDITION

---



PUBLISHED BY  
THE ESSEX INSTITUTE  
SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

1953

✓

Copyright by  
THE ESSEX INSTITUTE  
1953



1042.1  
S16 V8  
1953

Printed by  
NEWCOMB & GAUSS Co.  
SALEM, MASS.  
1953

## CONTENTS

---

	<i>Preliminary page</i>
MAP .....	iv
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS .....	iv
GENERAL INFORMATION .....	1
I. HISTORICAL SKETCH .....	5
II. THE WITCHCRAFT DELUSION .....	16
III. THE COMMERCE OF SALEM .....	30
IV. SALEM ARCHITECTURE .....	43
V. HAWTHORNE .....	54
VI. THE ESSEX INSTITUTE .....	79
VII. THE PEABODY MUSEUM .....	113
VIII. HISTORICAL LANDMARKS .....	
PUBLIC BUILDINGS .....	133
THE PIONEERS' VILLAGE .....	143
THE ROPES MEMORIAL .....	147
SALEM PUBLIC LIBRARY .....	148
THE SALEM ATHENAEUM .....	150
ESSEX COUNTY LAW LIBRARY .....	151
HALLS AND THEATRES .....	158
BUILDINGS, SITES, MONUMENTS, ETC. .....	159
IX. CHURCHES .....	175
X. SOCIETIES, CLUBS, ETC. .....	189
XI. CEMETERIES, PARKS AND SQUARES .....	196
XII. PROMINENT CITIZENS AND VISITORS .....	207
PORTRAITS .....	225
XIII. NEIGHBORING PLACES OF INTEREST .....	
BEVERLY .....	226
DANVERS .....	228
PEABODY .....	231
MARBLEHEAD .....	232

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

---

	PAGE
“Arbella” (Little) .....	145
Astrolabe .....	118
“Belisarius,” ship .....	36
Bentley, Rev. William .....	208
Boston & Maine Railroad Station .....	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Bowditch desk .....	92
Bowditch, Nathaniel .....	39
Bradstreet, Governor Simon .....	10
Bradstreet, Governor, house .....	84
Cabot-Endicott house .....	161
Cannibal bowl .....	128
Cent Shop, Ward House .....	111
Choate monument .....	173
City Hall .....	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Cliffs, Baker’s Island .....	203
Conant Statue .....	5
Court Houses .....	140
Crowninshield, Jacob .....	39
Custom House .....	72
Custom House letter (Hawthorne) .....	78
Dennis chair .....	92
Derby, Elias Hasket .....	35
Derby Wharf (Little) .....	12
Desk, Hawthorne’s Custom House .....	70
Doorways and doorheads .....	48-49
Dress, Silver lace brocade .....	95
East India Marine Hall .....	114
Endecott, Governor John .....	6
English, Philip, house .....	69
Essex Institute .....	80
Essex Institute, parlor .....	89

Essex Place .....	79
“Fanshawe” title page .....	57
Figurehead (McIntire) .....	119
Figurehead, New Zealand war canoe .....	129
Fiji Temple model .....	130
First church .....	176
Fitch, Mrs. Timothy .....	90
Forrester, Mrs. Charlotte Story .....	90
“Francis” ship .....	117
Golden Eagle killed in Peabody 1915 .....	127
“Grand Turk,” ship .....	34, 121
Gravestones, Charter street cemetery .....	197
Gray, William .....	35
“Grimshawe” house porch .....	63
Hamilton, Alexander .....	90
Hathorne, Judge, Gravestone .....	20
Hawaiian idol .....	129
Hawthorne, hotel .....	165
Hawthorne monument .....	173
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, autograph .....	77
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, birthplace .....	58
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, portraits .....	55
“Heaven and Day of Judgement” .....	120
“Hercules” ship .....	121
Hessian cap .....	96
Holyoke, Dr. Edward A. ....	213
Jacobs, George, Trial .....	25
Ketch, 18th Century .....	30
Lye-Tapley Shoe Shop .....	98
McIntire West Gate .....	200
Mall street house (Hawthorne) .....	61
Mangaian adz .....	128
“Margaret” ship .....	33
Market House .....	153
“Mindoro,” ship .....	41
Narbonne house .....	166
North and Essex streets, corner (Parkman and Corwin Houses) .....	21
Noyes, Nicholas, signature .....	28
Old Ladies’ Home .....	72
Oliver, B. Lynde, Esq. ....	60
Peabody, Joseph .....	39
Peabody Museum .....	112
Peirce-Nichols House .....	107
Pepperrell, Sir William .....	217

Peter, Rev. Hugh .....	6
Pickering Fire Back .....	100
Pickering, Col. Timothy .....	219
Pickering, Timothy, birthplace .....	44
Pickman house .....	168
Pickman Place .....	81
Pingree House .....	103
Pioneers' Village .....	143
Porch, Gideon Tucker .....	99
Proctor, John, signature .....	26
Read-Prescott-Peabody House .....	83
Registry of Deeds bldg. ....	142
Ropes Memorial .....	147
"St. Paul." ship .....	38
St. Peter's church .....	176
Salem Athenaeum .....	151
Salem Public Library .....	149
Sampler, Anne Gower Endecott .....	93
Serimshaw work on whale's tooth .....	118
Second church .....	176
Seven Gables, House of .....	65
Sewall, Judge Samuel .....	17
Silsbee, Nathaniel .....	39
South church .....	176
Spencer, Mrs., Gibraltar woman .....	53
Story Cradle .....	15
Story, Judge Joseph .....	222
Town Pump .....	74
Vaughan Doll and Toy House .....	101
Ward, John, House .....	109
Ward (Miles) and Derby (Richard) house .....	161
Washington medallion (McIntire) .....	201
Wesley church .....	2
Wildcat killed in West Peabody, 1920 .....	126
Willows .....	203
Wheatland, Dr. Henry .....	90

## GENERAL INFORMATION

---

**Salem**, shire town of Essex County, 16 miles northeast of Boston, is reached by the Boston & Maine R. R. (North Station), or busses from Haymarket Square, Boston; settled in 1626; area 8.2 square miles; population 1765, 4,427; 1776, 5,337; 1800, 9,457; 1820, 12,731; 1850, 20,264; 1875, 25,958; 1900, 35,956; 1910, 43,697; 1915, 36,826; 1920, 42,515; 1925, 46,782; 1935, 43,500; 1945, 42,833; 1950, 41,836.

**Railroad Station** (Boston & Maine system), on Washington Street.

**Bus Terminal** (Eastern Massachusetts system), Lynde street. Busses run to and from nearly all parts of the city, and to Marblehead, Lynn, Peabody, Danvers and Beverly; fare, by zone system.

**Taxicabs** may be hired at the railroad station, or at various garages. Drivers will point out places of interest. Taxi fare (1-6 persons) \$3. per hour. Licensed boy guides are also available by application to the Chamber of Commerce.

**Hotels.** Hotel Hawthorne, Hawthorne Boulevard (rooms, European plan, \$3.75 up); New Essex House, 176 Essex street; (*See chapter VIII, p. 166*); Hotel Lafayette, 116 Lafayette street; Restaurants and tea rooms may be found on Essex and Washington streets. Rooms and meals may be had at the House of the Seven Gables, 54 Turner street, during the summer and at the East India House, 384 Essex street, throughout the year, and the Haller-Daniels House, 1 Daniels street.

**Amusements.** Paramount Theatre (180 Essex street); E. M. Loew Salem Theatre (293 Essex street); Plaza Theatre (273 Essex street); Empire Theatre (285 Essex street). Lectures and concerts at Ames Hall (288 Essex street). See newspaper announcements. There are three golf courses in or near the city.

**Post Office** (Margin street) open 8-12 (Saturdays); 8-6 (weekdays).

**Parking Space**, near the B. M. Station, Margin street. Small fee. Several business houses provide free parking space, and free camping for automobile travelers may be had at Forest River Park.

**Airports.** There is one municipally owned airport in Beverly and a United States Coast Guard Airport at Winter Island.

**Telephone and Telegraph Offices.** Western Union Telegraph Office (79A Washington street), Public Telephone stations will be found in various drug stores, the hotels, and the court houses.

**Churches:** *Unitarian*, First church (316 Essex street); Second church, (19½ Washington Square). *Congregational*, Tabernacle (58 Washington street); Crombie street (7 Crombie street). *Episcopal* St. Peter's (24 St. Peter street); Grace, (381 Essex street). *Roman Catholic*, Immaculate Conception (15 Hawthorne Blvd); St. James (152 Federal street); St. Thomas the Apostle (260 North street); St. Joseph's (French) (135 Lafayette street); St. Anne's (French) (292 Jefferson avenue); St. John the Baptist (Polish) (28 St. Peter street); St. Mary's (Italian) (56 Margin street). *Baptist*, First Baptist (56 Federal street); French Evangelical (63 Canal street). *Universalist*, First Universalist, (10 Rust street). *Methodist*, Lafayette street (290 Lafayette street); Wesley (10 North street). Also North Salem Community (Fundamental) (127 North street). *First Church of Christ Scientist* (16 Lynde street). *Jewish Synagogues* (289 Lafayette street; 9 Front street). *Russian Greek Orthodox*, St. Nicholas (66 Forrester). *First Spiritualist* (34 Warren street). *St. John's Ukrainian Greek Catholic* (124 Bridge street). *Salvation Army* (10 Church street).

**Newspapers.** Salem Evening News (daily) established in 1880; Sunday Express, established in 1937.

**Manufacturers.** The manufacturing industries are remarkably diversified. Cotton, leather, shoes, incandescent lamps, radio tubes, games, ready-built homes, briquettes, and machinery are typical products. Salem has seventy different lines of manufacturing, representing one hundred and fifty factories, many of whose products have a world-wide reputation. **The Salem Terminal Coal**

**Co.** had from April, 1951, to March, 1952, receipts of 290,000 tons and shipments of 230,000 tons distributed throughout Essex County and many distant points.

The principal industry is the **Naumkeag Steam Cotton Co.**, which, since the great fire of 1914, has re-erected its buildings entirely in reinforced concrete, and now possesses what is considered the finest and best equipped plant of its kind in the country.

**Sylvania Electric Products Inc.** is one of the world's manufacturing leaders in the fields of lighting equipment, electronics, television and radio. The New England predecessor company of Sylvania was founded in nearby Middleton in 1901. The company now has plants and laboratories in more than three dozen communities in ten states, including eight in the Salem-Boston area. Employment in 1952 was approaching 30,000. The Lighting Division, with headquarters in Salem, is an important producer of incandescent bulbs, fluorescent lamps and tubing and fluorescent fixtures. The Electronics Division, with headquarters in Woburn, is a ranking supplier of electronic devices, equipment and components for civilian and military use.

**The Hytron Radio & Electronics Co.** manufactures radio tubes, television tubes, sun lamps and electronic devices, employing in its four plants about 4500.

**Parker Brothers, Inc.**, probably the world's best known manufacturer and publisher of games and kindergarten supplies, has its home office and factory at 190 Bridge street, Salem. The late George S. Parker founded the business as a boy in the 1880's and at the time of his death in 1952 was chairman of the board of directors of the company.

During the time of the company's growth from the day of its founding, Parker Brothers has provided untold hours of enjoyment for the American public and to people in other lands through its many game hits over the years which have included such well-known games as PILLOW-DEX, PING-PONG, CAMELOT, SORRY, ROOK, PIT, FLINCH, CLUE, and MONOPOLY.

The complete history of the company and its game successes is so interesting that it has been printed several times in various leading national publications.

**The Salem Oil & Grease Co.** was started in an old barn in 1909 and was incorporated under Massachusetts law in 1912.

Due to the loss in the Salem fire (1914), of the then leading tannery oil supply company, the Salem Oil & Grease Co. got a good foothold in the industry; and the company has steadily grown through the years from a two-to-three man shop to its present day, modern and efficient plant, which employs forty-five men.

It is the largest company known to devote itself exclusively to the manufacture of oils and greases for the tanning of leather and furs.

**Daniel Low & Company** established in Salem in 1867 in the last days of the clipper ships as a jewelry and gift store. The store became a favorite gift place for people in Salem. Gradually, as the sons and daughters of Salem moved to other parts of the country, they began ordering things by mail. In 1890, Daniel Low advertised a souvenir witch spoon in a national magazine which sold \$3000 worth of spoons from the one advertisement. This was the beginning of a large mail order business which today extends throughout the United States and its possessions. An annual catalog of gifts, diamonds and silverware is published and distributed to mail order customers.

During the year Daniel Low's employs about eighty-five people. This expands to about two hundred as the Christmas mail order season begins. The entire building of the third Meeting House erected on this site in 1718 is used for the store; the architecture is the same inside and outside as it was in the early days. The business is owned by members of the Daniel Low family, and operated by Mrs. Low.

## CHAPTER I

### HISTORICAL SKETCH

THE Pilgrims of Plymouth are looked upon as very early pioneers of New England, but Roger Conant and his companions came to Cape Ann only three years, and to Salem only six years, after the landing at Plymouth. They brought with them the Sheffield patent which authorized the settling of the North Shore of Massachusetts Bay. The original document may be seen in the fireproof stack of the Essex Institute. The difference in time between its date, January 1st, 1623, and the arrival of Roger Conant at Naumkeag, now Salem, in 1626, is accounted for by the fact that the little band of adventurers first essayed, as Hubbard says, a settlement at Cape Ann. This they found a poor place for husbandry in summer and a bleak residence for the winter fisheries, and soon moved on to the "pleasant and fruitful neck of land called Naumkeag." In a secluded cove, beautifully situated and protected from the northerly and easterly winds by an elevated point of land projecting into North River, their houses of temporary construction were raised. This cove was subsequently known as Massey's and lies at the foot of what is now Skerry street.

**Dorchester Company.** Meantime, in England, affairs were in a disturbed condition. The acts of the king were obnoxious to his subjects, and some of the rites and ceremonies of the established church were far from satisfactory to many of the people, both clergy and laymen. Emigration to the new land, though little known, seemed to offer a solution of the problem, and some of the best people, including those of education and wealth, determined



Roger Conant



to brave the stormy Atlantic and wring a livelihood by some means from the lands and waters of distant New England.

**Massachusetts Bay Company.** Accordingly the Dorchester company obtained a new charter, reserving privileges to the old Planters, both material and political, and in 1628 sent over a colony of settlers, under the leadership of Capt. John Endecott, who laid out streets and lots of land which he duly assigned to the new comers and also to the old Planters. What is now Washington street, from Essex street to the North river, was the principal thoroughfare. The company's

house at Cape Ann was taken down, brought to Salem and re-erected at what is now the southeastern corner of Washington and Federal streets, where it was occupied by Captain Endecott, and known as "the Governour's fayre house." The charter sent to Endecott was engrossed in duplicate, one of which, the property of the Salem Athenæum since 1827, is now on deposit in the Essex Institute.

**Church.** In July, 1629, came Rev. Francis Higginson and Rev. Samuel Skelton, respectively teacher and pastor of the church which was organized upon their arrival—it being the first Congregational Society formed in America. A meeting house was erected soon after upon the northwestern corner of the lot that had been granted to William Lord, and this site at what is now the corner of Essex and Washington streets, was occupied until 1923 by the meeting-house of the First Church. This church was independent of all other religious affiliations, having its powers and authority entirely within itself.



REV. HUGH PETER

**Roger Williams.** In 1633, Rev. Roger Williams, a young man from England, who had been with the Pilgrims at Plymouth a while, became pastor of the church. Two years later, because of his unrelenting practice of teaching that the civil magistrates should have no authority over the conscience of the people; that they had no power to punish for heresy; that every one should be free to choose such form of religious worship as he pleased, and not be compelled to support any other.—because of these teachings and also because of his free criticism of the acts of the government both here and in England he was banished from the colony by the magistrates at Boston, although supported by the Salem church. He fled in the cold and deep snow of winter into the pathless wilderness, and after much wandering and suffering made a settlement which subsequently became the Providence Plantations, and is now the State of Rhode Island.

**Hugh Peter.** In 1637, Rev. Hugh Peter became pastor. He was a non-conforming clergyman of England who had gone to Holland and had been for several years pastor of an independent church at Rotterdam. Becoming greatly interested in the promotion of business in the colony, especially in commerce, in 1641, with the consent of the church, he went to England to further the accomplishment of his desires. There he became interested in Cromwell's political revolution, and was appointed a chaplain in the Puritan army. He never returned to America, and upon the restoration in 1660 he was charged with being accessory to the king's death, principally by suggestions contained in sermons which he preached to the army. He was condemned and hanged at Charing Cross, and his body was disemboweled, quartered and exhibited in the four principal cities of the kingdom, and the head was raised upon a pole on London Bridge.

**Fishing Industry.** It was under the impulse given to commerce by Hugh Peter's agitation that vessels began to be built in Salem, and the fishing business was established at Winter Island. The island and neighboring shores of the Neck were laid out into half-

acre lots, which were granted by the town to various persons. Many warehouses were built near the water and a street was laid out over the island and appropriately named Fish street. Upon the Neck, houses of entertainment and refreshment were established and remained for many years. In those very early days the Neck was the busy part of the town.

**Religion.** The Puritans of Salem were stern Calvinists and their party in England believed in "purifying" and simplifying the service of the Church of England. The enforcement of their church discipline naturally became a duty of the civil authority. For the first fifty or sixty years even the suffrage was limited to church members.

**Quakers.** Laws had been passed excluding the Quakers from the Colony with the usual cruel punishment of the times culminating for a third offence in death. These were neither more nor less severe than for crimes against established religions elsewhere at the time. The prosecutions in Salem were chiefly aimed at those who disturbed the peace by trying to break up church services or ran naked down Essex street as a protest against the vanities of dress. Several Quakers were ordered to leave the town. After the restoration of Charles II the Quakers secured greater freedom in England which spread to the Colonies.

**The Indians** found living here by the first settlers were usually friendly and probably the settlement had no thought of savage depredations. But when King Philip rose in 1675, no town was wholly free from apprehension. The General Court ordered the immediate cutting of the brush from the sides of highways and the building of fortifications. In Salem, long defences constructed of palisade and stone at the western end of Essex street, from North River to the mill pond, cut off all approach by land from the surrounding country to the principal part of the settlement. The brave Capt. Thomas Lathrop with his company of seventy men, popularly called "The Flower of Essex," marched from Beverly to death in Indian ambush at Bloody Brook, in Deerfield. "Fight-

ing Joe" Gardner, commanding another company, left his house where the museum building of the Essex Institute now stands on Essex street, and found death at the hands of the savages in the great fight in the Narragansett swamp.

**Witchcraft.** Salem will be forever associated with the witchcraft delusion of 1692. If Salem did her part in persecuting the victims of this frenzy, and she probably did no more than her part, it is fair to say that it was Salem, also, that furnished many martyrs, who declined to save themselves through compromise or equivocation. It was not Salem, but the times, that were at fault, and at last, in May, 1693, a general gaol delivery occurred, and the madness of the year before, bringing violent and disgraceful death to twenty of our unoffending neighbors, mostly women, never from that day forward gathered head again. Only in Salem of all the places where witchcraft spread did the jury and some of the judges have the moral courage to confess afterwards that they were wrong and ask publicly for forgiveness. (*See chapter on Witchcraft Delusion, p. 16.*)

**Endecott and Bradstreet.** Salem was residence not only of Gov. John Endecott, but of Gov. Simon Bradstreet in his old age. They happened to be the first and last in the line of colonial governors. Their portraits are at the City Hall and at the Essex Institute. John Endecott came here as governor in September, 1628, under the authority of a charter in duplicate, one of which is owned by the Salem Athenaeum, and may be seen at the Essex Institute. A south of England man, of austere type and solemn mien, he filled the chair at various dates, for sixteen years in all. Simon Bradstreet, the nestor governor of Massachusetts, came to Salem with Winthrop in June, 1630. He outlived the whole Winthrop party, and died here in March, 1697, aged ninety-four, and was buried under a monument erected by the Province in the Charter Street Cemetery. He filled all the leading offices. He was twice governor, first from 1679 to 1686, when the charter was annulled, and again from 1689 to 1692, at the beginning of which



Bradstreet

ever been maintained with courage and persistence.

**Revolutionary War.** On Oct. 5, 1774, a Provincial Congress convened in the town house and initiated the political revolution that "terminated forever the actual exercise of the political power of England in and over this territory." At the North Bridge in Salem, British aggressions were arrested and British arrogance curbed two months before Lexington and Concord earned their immortal fame. The prominence of Salem throughout the struggle for the independence of the American colonies is well known. Beside the great number of officers and soldiers that she furnished to the army, one hundred and fifty-eight vessels were fitted out as privateers and became the larger part of the American navy. These privateers captured 445 prizes, more than the privateers of all other ports combined.\*

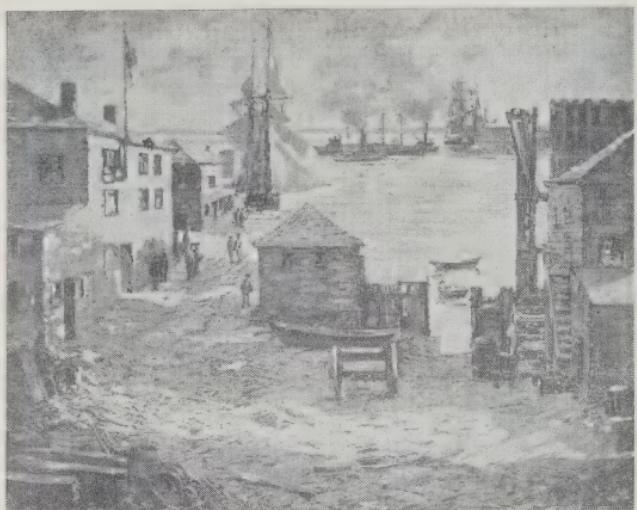
**Commerce.** Following the independence of the colonies, Salem merchants utilized the vessels they had built for the privateering service by entering into commercial relations with distant eastern regions never before visited by traders. Thus the Revolutionary War was an indirect cause of the commercial supremacy of Salem, for it put a sudden stop to all maritime enterprise and drove our

\* In the War of 1812, of the 250 armed vessels furnished by the whole country, 40 were from Salem. See J. D. Phillips: *Salem in the 18th century and Salem and the Indies*.

term, when eighty-six years of age, he put himself at the head of a Revolutionary movement which imprisoned Andros in the castle, and three years later transferred his authority to Sir William Phips, governor under the charter granted by William III to the Province. Bradstreet then became, at the patriarchal age of eighty-nine, the first assistant to the new governor. Such men as these have always been found in Salem, where education, strong principles and great causes have

whole mercantile marine into privateering. The result of this was that at the close of the war our men of substance found themselves in possession of an idle fleet, considerable in number, and made up of ships of much larger tonnage than before, that could outsail almost anything afloat. These ships were commanded by members of their own families, and manned by their own neighbors, native-born seamen of a very high class, and as well-drilled and able as could be found in any navy in the world. This fleet—capital and men—must be employed, and the merchants, all of them graduates of the cabin—many of them graduates of the forecastle—before they took their places in the counting room, at once struck out new channels for trade. They mapped out new ventures in unknown seas, where their enterprise, energy, courage and skill gave them precedence for a time over those of all other American ports. Their hand-made charts of unexplored coasts were used for years by those who followed in their wake, and even, in the case of the first expedition to Japan, by the navy of the United States. The end of this golden era came when the railroads began to build up the great ports at the expense of the less, transporting buyers to the larger markets, where they found a greater variety of commodities from which to choose, and a livelier competition to keep prices down, and also driving sellers to resort to the larger markets because there they found buyers in greater numbers. The shallow harbor also could not accomodate the larger shipping which commerce demanded. Time was when Salem counting-rooms were frequented by merchants from cities south of Philadelphia in search of certain imported articles for which this port once had the best market in the country.

**Houses.** If the visitor strolls through the short streets running from Derby street, at the east of the town, he will not fail to be struck as forcibly as at Portsmouth, N. H., or at Newport, R. I., with the style of the wooden houses built long before the Revolution by the old skippers, who had made their way up from forecastle to quarterdeck in schooners trading with the West Indies. They had navigated the Mediterranean and Spanish and English waters,



OLD DERBY WHARF

Philip Little

Essex Institute Picture Gallery

enterprise, high spirit and intelligence of a wonderful race of men now practically extinct, no less than to the commercial pre-eminence of the past of Salem.

**Shipping.** In decades past Salem wharves were lined with ships which Salem merchants had built and manned and sent to every market of the world. They were piled high with the rich products of every civilized and barbaric land. There were Eastern ports where the names of New York, Philadelphia and Baltimore were scarcely known, but where Salem, of such small stature among her sister cities, was supposed to be the great commercial emporium of the West. In 1825, there were one hundred and ninety-eight vessels flying Salem signals, and Salem ships were the first to display the American flag in many foreign ports, and to open trade with St. Petersburg, Zanzibar, Sumatra, Calcutta, Bombay, Batavia, Arabia, Madagascar and Australia. No one makes a living here now by bringing gum-copal, or silks, or ivory, or spices, or dates, or coffee, from the Orient, and the merchant no longer waits in his

and had come home to enjoy life after seeing all that was worth looking at in the old-world capitals beyond the seas. The houses they built, the gardens with which they made them bright and cheery, the choice furniture and rare decorations with which they filled their homes, are at once monuments to the

counting-room, spy-glass in hand, to see his ships come up the bay. The foreign commerce of Salem, years ago, spread its white wings and sailed away forever. It is as much a thing of the past as is the French and Indian war or the witchcraft frenzy. Hawthorne intimated a purpose of writing the romance of it, but left the promise unfulfilled. The only monuments of that half-century of maritime success, besides the marine collections at the Peabody Museum, are the stately houses found scattered about the city, erected for merchants who prospered in their ventures upon the sea.

In the government of the nation in its early years, many of the cabinet officers and members of the senate and house of representatives were Salem men, notably Col. Timothy Pickering, Benjamin W. and Jacob Crowninshield, cabinet officers; United States Senators George Cabot, Nathaniel Silsbee, Benjamin Goodhue and others. Salem's unique stand in the war with England in 1812-1815; the creditable part she bore in the war of the Rebellion; and her well-earned eminence as a scientific and educational center, are matters of general knowledge.

**Hawthorne.** The birthplace of Nathaniel Hawthorne is a shrine at which pilgrims ceaselessly come to worship, and the devotee of genius must turn his steps to Union street if he would view the plain wooden house which was so unconscious of its coming importance when, on July 4, 1804, the romancer's birth took place there. The enthusiast zealous enough to seek the house where Hawthorne first drew breath, needs but little information about the man and his work. The Salem Custom House is the same decorous place it was when Hawthorne made entries and stencilled packages and sketched romances there, but Salem no longer is a port of entry. The surveyor's old pine desk, on the lid of which with his thumb-nail he scratched his name, may be seen there. The house where he is said to have obtained the suggestion of the title of his book, "The House of the Seven Gables," is at the foot of Turner street. The story of "The Grimshawe House" referred to the house at 53 Charter street, next the burial ground, this being the house where

the romancer wooed and won his bride. The porch originally on this house has been removed to the out-of-doors museum of the Essex Institute.

In a conversation reported by Mrs. Rose Hawthorne Lathrop, Dr. Holmes said: "I not long ago was visiting the custom house at Salem, the place in which your father discovered those mysterious records that unfolded into 'The Scarlet Letter.' Ah! how suddenly and easily genius renders the spot rare and full of a great and new virtue (however ordinary and bare in reality) where it has looked and dwelt! A light falls upon the place not of sea or land! How much he did for Salem! Oh, the purple light, the soft haze, that now rests upon our glaring New England! He has done it, and it will never be harsh country again. How perfectly he understood Salem! Strange folk! It is the most delightful place to visit for this reason, because it so carefully retains the spirit of the past. And their very surroundings bear them out." Dr. Holmes cried, "Where else are the little dooryards that hold their glint of sunlight so tenaciously, like the still light of wine in a glass? Year after year it is ever there." (*See chapter on Nathaniel Hawthorne, p. 54.*)

**The Great Fire** began in the early afternoon in June 23, 1914, as a result of an explosion of chemicals in a leather manufactory located in "Blubber Hollow," Boston street. The flames were not under control until thirteen hours later, when about 1,800 buildings, about 1,600 of which were dwelling-houses, and 41 factories, had been destroyed, covering an area of about  $25\frac{1}{2}$  acres. It was estimated that nearly 15,000 persons were made homeless, while the property loss amounted to nearly \$14,000,000. Fortunately but three lives were lost. While the conflagration spread over a large area due to a prevailing high wind, to roofs covered with wooden shingles, dry as tinder, which quickly caught fire from the flying brands, and to low pressure in the water supply at critical moments, yet the pathway of the flames mainly was through the manufacturing and more recent residential portions of the city, so that nothing of historic or early architectural interest was destroyed.

**Salem of Today.** The features of the Salem of today which arrest the stranger's attention next after her wonderfully fine old-time domestic architecture, are her two museums and her three libraries.



THE STORY CRADLE

In which Justice Joseph Story and his sculptor son William Wetmore Story passed their infant years.

## CHAPTER II

### THE WITCHCRAFT DELUSION

THE origin of the Witchcraft Delusion of 1692 is found in the belief in witchcraft that was universally held by the people of that time. A witch or wizard was a person who was regarded as having made a formal compact with the devil whereby the former should become the faithful subject of the latter and in return be given supernatural powers of a diabolical nature. The Bible contains the command, "Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live"; and this injunction, literally interpreted, brought about the terrible results of Salem witchcraft. The rich and the poor, the learned and the ignorant, ministers and judges, accounted for many things that they could not understand by ascribing them to witchcraft.

Prior to 1692, executions for this crime had occurred in Boston, New England and in thousands in England and all over Europe. The Salem quarterly court was not a stranger to such trials, several persons having been complained of, presented and tried therein for the practice of witchcraft at different times during the preceding half-century. Thousands had been convicted therefor and executed in the old world, many of whom were burned, but none was ever executed in that way in New England.

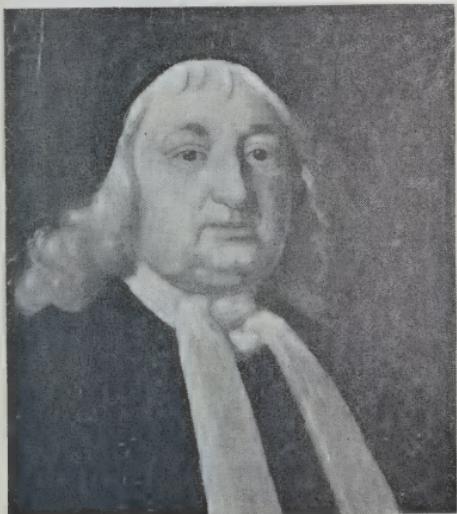
**Salem Village.** The awful tragedies of 1692 did not originate in what is now the city of Salem, but in Salem Village (now Danvers), then a part of Salem, some seven miles from Town House Square, in the house and family of the pastor of the Village church. The meeting-house stood on the southern side of Hobart street, about seven hundred feet northeast of the present meeting-house, and the parsonage was in the field some three hundred feet from Centre street, near Forest street, on the other side of the Meeting

House lane, as the road on which the first meeting-house stood was early called. The minister was Rev. Samuel Parris, formerly a merchant in the West Indies, whence he had brought three slaves. One of them was a native Indian woman named Tituba, who was thoroughly imbued with the superstition of her former home.

**The Accusing Children.** Children love to hear of the mysterious, and doubtless many weird tales were poured into the eager ears of Elizabeth, the nine-year-old daughter of Mr. Parris, and her mates, who were already prepared for their reception by similar stories of New England origin. It is evident that sorcery was among the accomplishments of Tituba, and the effect of her companionship

*Mercy Lewis*

was soon apparent in the actions of the children of the neighborhood. Besides Elizabeth Parris, her cousin, Abigail Williams, aged eleven, Ann Putnam, twelve, Mary Walcott, Mercy Lewis, and Elizabeth Hubbard, seventeen, and Elizabeth Booth. Susanna Sheldon, Mary Warren and Sarah Churchill, two of the latter being servants, were concerned. These girls, in the winter of 1691-2, met at the parsonage, and whiled away the evenings by practising palmistry and magic. The first three named soon performed the little tricks more openly. They crept into holes and under chairs, placed them-



JUDGE SAMUEL SEWALL  
of the Witchcraft Court  
Essex Institute Picture Gallery

selves in odd postures, uttered loud outcries, and used ridiculous, incoherent and unintelligible expressions. The attention of Mr. Parris was drawn to these uncommon proceedings and he was dismayed. The Village physician, Dr. Griggs,\* was summoned, and he promptly pronounced the children bewitched. The remedy sought by the parents of the girls was not, as it should have been, the rod, but fasting and prayer. Parson Parris and the neighboring ministers thus unsuccessfully endeavored to ward off the evil influence. Then resort was had to other means. Who bewitched the girls? They were besought to tell, and finally cried out, "Good," "Osburn," "Tituba." Thus began the damning accusations that were so potent in all the subsequent history of the delusion. One witch was the most that was naturally expected in a small community like that of Salem Village. Behold! three of these tools of Satan operating in the best families, even in that of the minister. Excitement, followed by terror, prevailed. Bolts and bars were ineffectual against these emissaries of supernatural power.

**The Accused.** February 29, 1691-2, warrants were duly issued against Sarah Good, Sarah Osburn, and Tituba, upon the complaint of four men of influence and character. Sarah Good was a married woman, who lived apart from her husband, and by begging obtained a precarious support for herself and children. No one cared for her and few manifested any pity for her poverty and forlorn condition. Sarah Osburn had an unbalanced mind, and had become bed-ridden. She found as little sympathy among her neighbors as Sarah Good. The arrests were made, and on March 1, Jonathan Corwin and John Hathorne, two magistrates from Salem, came to the Village to examine the prisoners. Judge Corwin lived in what is popularly known as the "Witch House," at the western corner of North and Essex streets, and Colonel Hathorne on Washington street, where the Holyoke Building, numbered 114, now stands.

\* See sketch of Dr. William Griggs in Jackson's "The Physicians of Essex County."

**The Examination.** With pomp and display of official power they appeared at the meeting-house, where a great number of people were gathered to witness the novel scene. Each of the accused was subjected to an examination by the magistrates based upon a foregone conviction of the prisoner's guilt. The accusing children were present during the hearing and frequently went into convulsions, which they attributed to one or other of the prisoners. The husband of Sarah Good was present and shamelessly testified against her. Sarah Osburn, frail in body and weak in mind, was next brought in and examined. Tituba came last. She showed a lively imagination and was very clever, confessing enough to implicate others. She said that the devil variously appeared to her as a hog, a black dog, a yellow bird, a black girl; and that the witches rode on sticks through the air, and immediately arrived wherever they chose to go. Neither time, distance nor matter hindered them.

**Sarah Good.** Sarah Good was confined in the jail at Boston, indicted and tried in Salem in the last of June, and executed by hanging in Salem, July 19.

**Sarah Osburn** was confined at first in the Ipswich jail and died in Boston jail while awaiting trial, in May, being too feeble to withstand the privations of prison life. She probably lacked the merest necessities of life even in her confinement, as prisoners were then required to be supported by themselves or their families.

**Tituba** was never tried and after lying in jail thirteen months, was sold to pay her prison fees. She had declared in her examination that there were two other witches whom she did not know, and Parson Parris immediately and untiringly sought their discovery. Accusers were brazen and malicious autocrats, allowing their spite and prejudice to prey upon whomsoever they would.

**Giles Corey.** The unpopular octogenarian, Giles Corey, who lived on a spot near the present railroad station at West Peabody, was greatly interested in the examinations, but his wife Martha did not wish him to attend them and objected to his going. She

was soon accused of witchcraft and her husband appeared against her. She was tried and condemned, being executed by hanging September 22. After the trial the old man realized the grievous

wrong he had done and did not escape the terrible charge himself, being arrested and examined April 19. When arraigned, he stood mute, refusing to plead. For two days friends vainly expostulated with him. Except he pleaded in answer to the charge against him, he could not be tried under the law that was then in force; and, as provided in that law,\* he was subjected to compulsion, which was no less than the placing of heavy weights upon his

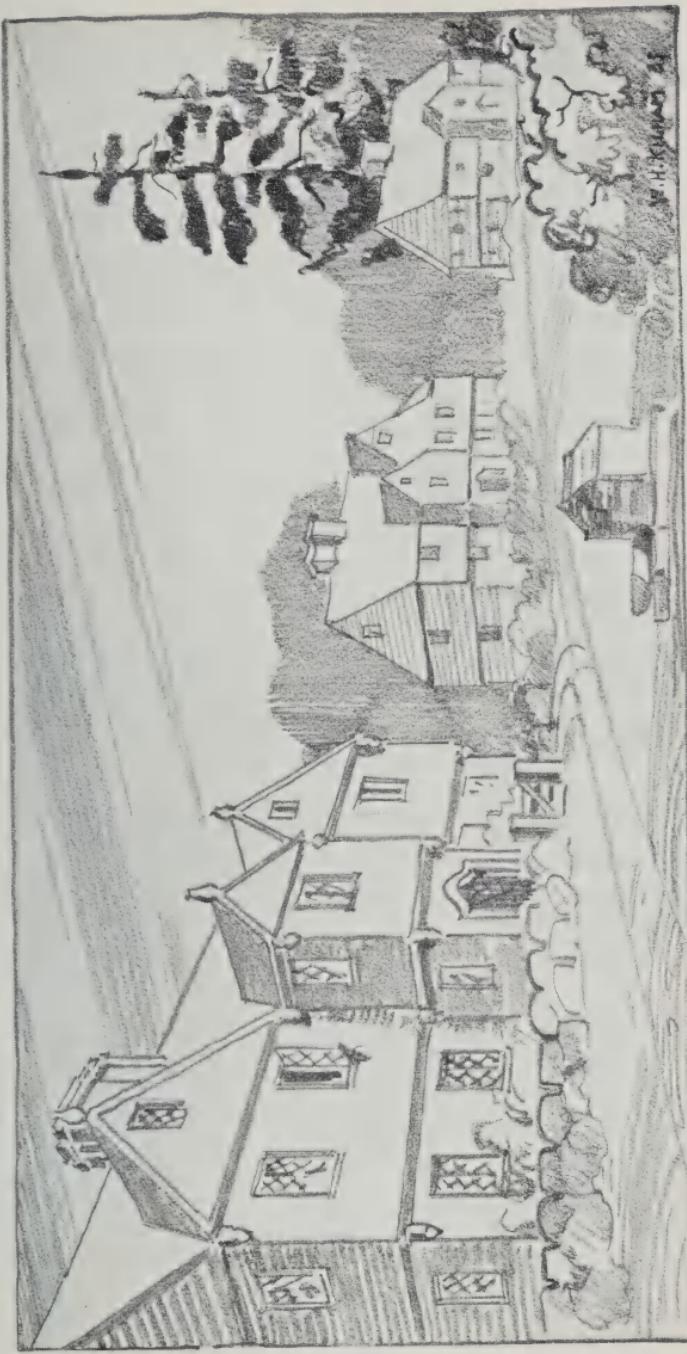
Gravestone of Judge Hathorne  
in Charter Street Cemetery

prostrate body until he answered—or died. This awful punishment was inflicted on Giles Corey at Salem, September 19, three days before his wife was hanged, and he endured his terrible agony till death brought relief. This event has no parallel in American history. Some think that he thus, purposely, expiated the wrong done to his worthy wife.

**Rebecca Nurse.** Who was the fourth woman whom Tituba said she had seen afflict children? The neighborhood was amazed at learning that Rebecca Nurse was the one accused. Seventy years of age, and a woman of most exemplary character, she bore the examination with patience and dignity. At her trial a paper, signed by thirty-nine persons of the neighborhood, testifying to her blameless life, was offered in evidence. The jury returned a

\* The law was that the prisoner "be remanded to the prison from whence he came and put into a low, dark chamber, and there be laid on his back on the bare floor, naked, unless when decency forbids; that there be placed upon his body as great a weight of iron as he could bear, and more, that he hath no sustenance, save only on the first day, three morsels of the worst bread, and on the second day three draughts of standing water, that should be nearest to the prison door, and in this situation this should be alternately his daily diet till he died, or—as anciently the judgment ran—till he answered."—Chitty's Blackstone, IV, 265.





THE CORNER OF NORTH AND ESSEX STREETS IN 1700

Showing the Deliverance Parkman and Jonathan Corwin houses. The Corwin house, known as the Witch house, still stands

verdict of "not guilty," but the judges yielded to the clamorous demand for blood and withdrew the favorable decision. She was condemned to die, and was executed by hanging, July 19. Her home is standing on Pine street, in Danvers, and in the field below it, on Collins street, is the family burial ground, in which her remains rest, having been brought, at the time, from the place of execution. In 1885, a granite monument to her memory was erected, bearing a tribute from the pen of Whittier:

"O, Christian Martyr! who for truth could die,  
When all about thee owned the hideous Lie!  
The world, redeemed from Superstition's sway,  
Is breathing freer for thy sake today."

Hundreds of persons, in all were accused and arrested, many of them being tried and condemned.

**The Jail.** The jail in Salem where the victims were confined was situated on the western side of St. Peter street, then called Prison lane, on the north side of what is now Federal street, near the house numbered 4 on that street, and that house is said to contain some of the timbers of the old jail. The jail was erected upon this site in 1683, and was taken down in 1813. The eastern end of Federal street was originally a part of the jail lot.

**The Witch House**, at the corner of North and Essex streets, where preliminary trials are said to have been held, was standing in part at least well before 1675, when the chimneys were taken down and the building remodeled. In this house lived Jonathan Corwin, one of the judges of the witchcraft court, the Court of Oyer and Terminer. It yet retains the overhanging second story and within is a great chimney which is about twelve by eight feet in dimensions on the first floor. In the Corwin manuscripts now in possession of the Essex Institute is preserved the original contract for finishing this house in 1674-5. It is a very early example of building specifications and is not lacking in the diffuseness and obscurity common to such documents at the present time. It reads as follows:

"Articles and Convenants made, agreed upon and confirmed between Mr. Jonathan Corwin, of Salem, merchant, and Daniel Andrewe of Salem, of the other part, concerning a parcell of worke as followeth, viz.;Imprimis the said parcell of worke is to be bestowed in filling, plaistering and finishing a certain dwelling house bought by the said owner of Capt. Nath'll Davenport of Boston, and is situate in Salem aforesaid, towards the west end of the towne between the houses of Rich. Sibley to the west and Deliverance Parkman on the east,\* and is to be performed to these following directions, viz.

"1. The said Daniel Andrewe is to dig and build a cellar as large as the easterly room of said house will afford (and in the said room according to the breadthe and lengthe of it) not exceeding six foot in height; and to underpin the porch and the remaining part of the house not exceeding three foot in height; also to underpin the kitchen on the north side of the house not exceeding one foot; the said kitchen being 20 foot long and 18 foot wide; and to make steps with stones into the cellar in two places belonging to the cellar, together with stone steps up into the porch. 2. For the chimneys he is to take down the chimneys which are now standing, and to take and make up of the bricks that are now in the chimneys and the stones that are in the leanto cellar that now is, and to rebuild the said chimney with five fire places, viz., two below and two in the chambers and one in the garret; also to build one chimney in the kitchen, with ovens and a furnace, not exceeding five feet above the top of the house. 3. He is to set the jambs of the two chamber chimneys and of the easternmost room below with Dutch tiles, the said owner finding the tiles; also to lay all the hearths belonging to the said house and to point the cellar and underpinning of sd. house and so much of the 3 hearths as are to be laid with Dutch tiles, the said owner is to find them. 4. As for lathing and plaistering he is to lath and siele the 4 rooms of the house betwixt the joists overhead with

\* A drawing of the way these houses looked is in Phillips' "Salem in the 17th Century."

a coat of lime & haire upon the clay; also to fill the gable ends of the house with bricks and to plaister them with clay. 5. To lath and plaister the partitions of the house with clay and lime, and to fill, lath and plaister with bricks and clay the porch and porch chamber and to plaister them with lime and hair besides; and to siele and lath them overhead with lime; also to fill lath and plaister the kitchen up to the wall plate on every side. 6. The said Daniel Andrewe is to find lime, bricks, clay, stone, haire, together with labourers and workmen to help him, and generally all materials for the effecting and carrying out of the aforesaid worke, excepte laths and nailes. 7. The whole work before mentioned is to be done, finished and performed att or before the last day of August next following, provided that said Daniel or any that work with him, be not lett or hindered for want of the carpenter worke. 8. Lastly in consideration of all the aforesaid worke, so finished and accomplished as is aforesaid, the aforesaid owner is to pay or cause to be paid unto the said workman the summe of fifty pounds in money current in New England, to be paid at or before the finishing of the said worke. And for the true performance of the premises we bind ourselves each to other, our heyers, executors, and administrators, firmly by these presents, as witness our hands, this nineteenth day of February, Anno Domini 1674-5.

“Jonathan Corwin.  
Daniel Andrewe.”

In 1948 the city of Salem acquired this property and restored it, leasing it immediately afterwards to an association called “Historic Salem, Inc,” which operates the house for exhibition purposes, being open to the public for a fee.

**The Court House.** The court house stood in the middle of Washington street, in front of the Masonic Temple. The trials occurred in the second story of the building, the first story being devoted to the town school. It was erected from the frame of the first meeting house, for a town house, in 1675, just westerly of the Daniel Low store and was removed to this site in Town House



TRIAL OF GEORGE JACOBS FOR WITCHCRAFT IN 1692  
By Matteson. Essex Institute Picture Gallery

Square in 1677, the chamber being fitted for the use of the courts in May, 1679. It remained the town and court house until 1718. Opposite the site of that old court house, attached to the Masonic Temple, is a bronze tablet inscribed as follows:

“Nearly opposite this spot stood, in the middle of the street a building devoted, from 1677 until 1718, to municipal and judicial uses. In it, in 1692, were tried and condemned for witchcraft most of the nineteen persons who suffered death on the gallows. Giles Corey was here put to trial on the same charge, and, refusing to plead, was taken away and pressed to death. In January, 1693, twenty-one persons were here tried for witchcraft, of whom eighteen were acquitted and three condemned, but later set free, together with about 150 accused persons, in a general delivery which occurred in May.”

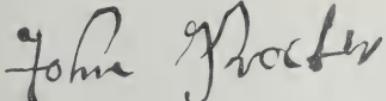
**The Court.** When the first accusations were made there was no settled government in the colony and therefore no legal court to try the persons imprisoned for witchcraft. The jails were filled with prisoners awaiting trial. Governor Phips arrived May 14, 1692, and the provincial charter that he brought empowered the General Court to create trial courts. But an election had to be held before the General Court could act under the charter and establish courts to try the accused, and an election required time. Governor Phips, as representative of the King, in whom the power lay, appointed, May 27, commissioners of Oyer and Terminer, as they were called, to hear and decide the cases. The deputy governor, William Stoughton, was named first, and presided as chief Justice. His associates were Nathaniel Saltonstall of Haverhill, Maj. Bartholomew Gedney, John Hathorne, and Jonathan Corwin of Salem, Maj. John Richards, Wait Winthrop, Peter Sargent and Capt. Samuel Sewall of Boston. Mr. Saltonstall withdrew from the court after the trial of Bridget Bishop, as he would not take part in further proceeding of a like nature.

Thomas Newton, a lawyer, was appointed as the special attorney of the King for the witchcraft cases, and prepared the earlier ones for the court. He afterwards resigned and Andrew Checkley

was appointed in his place. Checkley had been attorney general since 1689. George Corwin, nephew of Judge Corwin, was appointed sheriff, being then twenty-six years of age, and living on the site, now numbered 150 Washington street. Stephen Sewall, brother of Judge Sewall, was the clerk. He lived at what is now the western corner of Sewall and Essex streets.

**The Condemned.** The accused were first confined in the jails at Salem, Boston, Ipswich and Cambridge, most of them being imprisoned in Boston, where capital trials had usually taken place. After the court was organized, persons accused of witchcraft confined in other jails were transferred to Salem. The court held its first session June 2, for the trial of Bridget Bishop. She was convicted and hanged June 10. At the court house can be seen the warrant, signed by Judge Stoughton, and addresses to the sheriff,

bearing the return that the latter had performed his duty. He stated in his return on the warrant that she had been "hanged by the neck until she was dead and buried in the place." But subsequently he

  
drew his pen through the words "and buried in the place." With this warrant may be seen the two massive volumes of original evidence, and pins of that time, such as the afflicted testified had been used in pricking their bodies.

Among those condemned at the subsequent sessions of the court, Sarah Good and Rebecca Nurse of Salem Village, Sarah Wildes of Topsfield, Elizabeth Howe of Ipswich, and Susannah Martin of Amesbury, were executed July 19; Rev. George Burroughs of Wells, Me., John Proctor, George Jacobs, Sr., and John Willard, all of Salem Village, and Martha Carrier of Andover, August 19; and Martha Corey of Salem Village, Mary Easty of Topsfield, Margaret Scott of Rowley, Alice Parker and Ann Pudeator of Salem, Wilmot Reed of Marblehead and Samuel Wardwell and Mary Parker of Andover, September 22.

**Executions.** Executions took place on four occasions, about a month apart, June 10, July 19, August 19, and September 22. Five persons were hanged August 19, four of whom were men, Rev. George Burroughs being one of the number, and Cotton Mather was present. Upon the latter, Mr. Burroughs declared his innocence, and prayed, closing with the Lord's prayer. This was done with so much calmness and excellence of spirit that the people were deeply affected. He had been a predecessor of Parson Parris in the Village church, and doubtless many of his old charges were present. As soon as Mr. Burroughs was executed, Mather, who was mounted upon a horse, addressed the people, endeavoring to persuade them that Burroughs was indeed worthy of his ignoble end. September 22, when the last executions occurred, and eight persons were hanged, Rev. Nicholas Noyes, pastor of the Salem church, was present. Turning toward the bodies of the victims, he said, "What a sad thing it is to see eight fire-brands of hell hanging there."

*Nicholas Noyes*

The route to the place of execution, by which the condemned prisoners were taken in a cart from the jail, was through St. Peter, Essex and Boston streets. Passing over Town Bridge, they turned in on the old highway where Proctor street is located, and passed to the ledges on the hill formerly overlooking a pond. The pond has been filled and the old road obliterated, but the hill remains in the same condition as when in that dreadful summer of 1692 so many persons were awfully and unjustly deprived of life.

**The Reaction.** Throughout the sessions of the court the trials were conducted in accordance with English law. As the summer advanced, persons of the highest character and respectability were accused and brought to trial. Knowing who these people were, the court became more strict in the matter of proof and "spectral evidence" was refused admission. For want of legitimate evidence convictions ceased, but not before the wife of Governor Phips and the wife of the Rev. John Hale of Beverly who had urged on the

prosecutions, had been accused. Mrs. Hale was herself a first cousin of the Rev. Nicholas Noyes. In May, 1693, Governor Phips ordered the release from jail of all persons accused of witchcraft, whether under sentence or not, and hundreds returned to their homes. That order was the knell that forever banished witchcraft from the list of crimes in America.

If there be any gleam of sunlight breaking through the gloom it may be found in this, that the executions at Salem gave the needed shock to public sensibility and put an immediate and effectual end to the whole inhuman work. It is also to the credit of the Court, that some of the judges and the jury signed written statements of their error in convicting the unfortunate sufferers.

## CHAPTER III

### THE COMMERCE OF SALEM

**Fishing Industry.** The maritime advantages of the situation of Salem and the enterprise and self-reliance of her inhabitants created that commercial activity of the town which ended only with the coming of the railroad and the building up of the great ports at the expense of the less. The first settlers at Salem were sea-faring men, having been engaged in fishing at Cape Ann for three years. They were soon followed by others who shortly engaged in trade with England and the West Indies. At the begin-

ning of Endecott's government here he was directed by the home company to send to England as return cargoes, "staves, sarsaparilla, sumack, sturgeon and other fish and beaver." The waters of the harbor and rivers contained immense quantities of fish, and for more than a century they were the staple export, Winter Island being the headquarters of the fish trade.

**Trade with West Indies.** About 1640, vessels were sailing to Antigua and Barbadoes, some of the Leeward Islands and the large islands of the West Indies, the Bermudas, Virginia and England, and in 1644, Josselyn

EARLY 18TH CENTURY KETCH

wrote that in Salem there "are many rich merchants." Within the next twenty-five years trade was extended to Spain, France and Holland. The great majority of vessels then engaged in com-

merce from Salem were sloops and ketches, measuring from twenty to forty tons burthen, and manned by four, five or six men each. In 1689 Salem had on the water, one ship of eighty tons and another of two hundred, one bark, three sloops, and twenty ketches.

**Commerce in 1700.** Col. John Higginson, a prominent Salem merchant wrote of the trade here in 1700 as follows: "Dry, merchantable codfish for the markets of Spain, Portugal and the Straights, refuse fish, lumber, horses and provisions for the West Indies. Returns made directly to England are sugar, molasses, cotton, wool, logwood, and Brasiletto-wood, for which we depend on the West Indies. Our own produce, a considerable quantity of whale and fish-oil, whalebone, furs, deer, elk, and bearskins are annually sent to England. We have much shipping here and rates are low." Commerce was continued in similar lines to the beginning of the Revolution. With the exception of Boston, Salem, Beverly and Marblehead were the principal commercial ports of the Province, having most of the shipping.

**Revolutionary War.** At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War the colonists found themselves at issue with the most powerful maritime nation of the world. Boston and New York were occupied by the enemy, and the success of the Americans was early believed to lie in the hands of the patriotic merchants of Salem Bay. They soon recognized the exigency of the times and turned their vessels into privateers. Not only did they use the vessels already built, but the merchants had larger and better ones constructed, equipped and manned for this very service. During the war more than 158 vessels were thus sent out from Salem. They carried upward of 2,000 guns and were manned by several thousand seamen. They took 445 prizes.

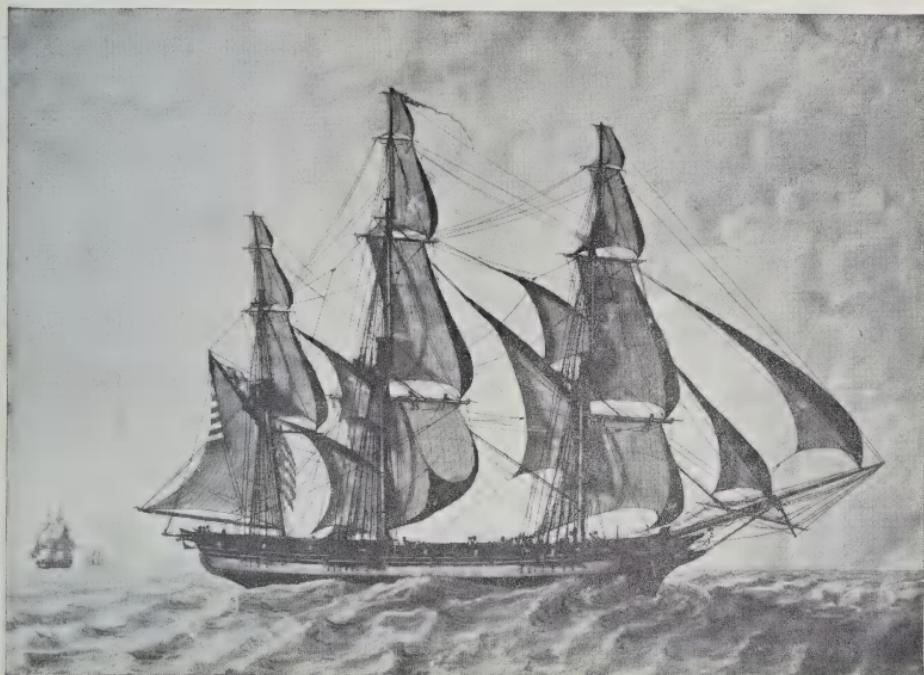
**The Far East.** Upon the return of peace, the merchants found themselves possessed of many swift-sailing vessels larger than any they had used prior to the Revolution. They were too large to be profitably employed in domestic commerce or in short voyages to European or West India ports, therefore the owners determined to

send their vessels to new and more distant countries, and to open trade with their people. Many hundred seamen were idle, most of them young and full of daring, and soon the sails of the merchant ships of Salem were to be seen in every land of the then known world and Salem became famous in the uttermost parts, its name as widely known as that of America.

**Adventures.** Many of these voyages were not less exciting and dangerous than the experiences of the privateers in the Revolution. The history of the period is crowded with incidents of daring and adventure in unknown seas and in ports never before visited by Americans; of encounters with pirates and tribes of cruel and treacherous savages; of contests with armed ships of France and England; and of imprisonment among the Algerines and in the dungeons of France and Spain.

**Navigation.** It has already been said that the seamen were young. When one of the first vessels to the East Indies set sail from Salem, neither the captain nor his mates were out of their teens; yet, with imperfect mathematical instruments, and without charts, except of their own making, they carried through coral reefs and along strange shores, ship and cargo safely to their destination. The importance of the position of these boys did not alone lie in the navigation of the vessel. They had the selling of the outward cargo and the purchase of another to bring home with them. The whole financial success of the voyage depended upon them, as there was no communication with the owners during the year and a half covered by the voyage, and no news of them received at home until they came sailing back again. The telegraphic cable long ago destroyed the romantic interest which the mystery of silence wove around these voyages.

**Derby Street.** Derby street, the great commercial thoroughfare of the town, was filled with the bustle of business. Vessels crowded at the wharves, having their cargoes of silk from India, tea from China, pepper from Sumatra, coffee from Arabia, spices from Batavia, gum-copal from Zanzibar, and hides from Africa,



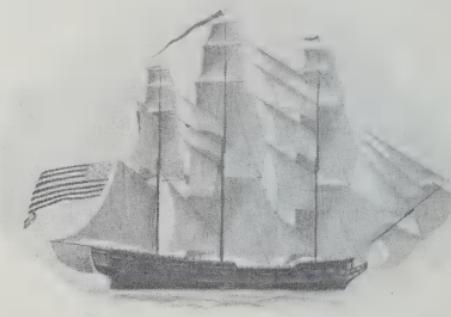
SHIP "MARGARET," BUILT IN 1800

removed to the warehouses, while others were being laden with American goods for the foreign trade. At every lounging place on every street corner, and about the doors of the numerous sailor boarding-houses were seamen fresh from Eastern countries, and others about to sail thither, having all the peculiarities of the true rover of the seas. The shops and stores were full of strange and unique articles, brought from distant lands. Parrots screamed and monkeys and other small animals from foreign forests gamboled at will in the back shops. Suggestions of foreign lands met the vision at every turn. Many of the curiosities and oriental objects now preserved in the Peabody Museum, were brought home on these voyages. The ship "America," Capt. Jacob Crowninshield of Salem, master and owner, brought home from Bengal,

in 1796, the first elephant that was ever seen in the United States. Salem, for many years, was one of the principal ports for the distribution of foreign merchandise. In the year 1800, more than eight million pounds of sugar were imported and sold to traders from various sections of the country. The streets were alive with teams loaded with goods. Draft wagons and drays came from long distances, sometimes more than a hundred miles, for all merchandise had to be transported overland in this arduous and tedious manner. In the taverns, teamsters from many parts of northwestern New England were ever to be found discussing politics or current events, or becoming cheerful over frequent potations of New England rum, which was then manufactured in Salem in great quantities.

**Russia.** The first new trade opened after the Revolution, was with Russia. In 1784, the bark "Light Horse," commanded by Capt. Nehemiah Buffington, opened the American trade at St. Petersburg. The trade with that country became extensive, but greatly declined after the embargo in 1808. The last entry in Salem of a cargo from Archangel was in 1820; from Cronstadt in 1836; and from St. Petersburg in 1843.

**Cape of Good Hope.** The Cape of Good Hope trade was also opened in 1784, and the first voyage was made in the "Grand Turk," a fast-sailing ship of three hundred tons built for Elias Hasket Derby, in 1781, as a privateer, carrying twenty-two guns. In 1784, Mr. Derby dispatched this vessel, under command of Capt. Jonathan Ingersoll, on the first voyage from Salem to the Cape, the exportation being New England rum.



SHIP "GRAND TURK," BUILT IN 1781



ELIAS HASKET DERBY  
By Frothingham Peabody Museum

**East Indies.** The East India trade was also opened by Mr. Derby, in 1788, by the ship "Atlantic," which was commanded by his son. This was the first vessel to display the American ensign at Bombay and Calcutta. The next year, he imported the first cargo of Bombay cotton brought to this country. In 1798, the ship "Belisarius" brought a cargo of sugar and coffee from Calcutta and the Isle of France. In 1803, the ship "Lucia" brought from Calcutta a cargo of sugar, indigo and cheroots, on which the duty was

**China.** The next year (1785) Mr. Derby opened trade with China by sending to Canton the "Grand Turk," which was then commanded by Capt. Ebenezer West. He there competed with the European syndicates of merchants for the native trade. The ship "Grand Turk" was also the first New England vessel to open trade with the French of the Isle of France. This was in 1787. Sugar was the principal article of French exportation. In 1794, the ship "Aurora" brought from there a cargo of 424,034 pounds of sugar, it being consigned to William Gray.



WILLIAM GRAY  
After Stuart  
Peabody Museum



SHIP "BELISARIUS," BUILT IN 1794

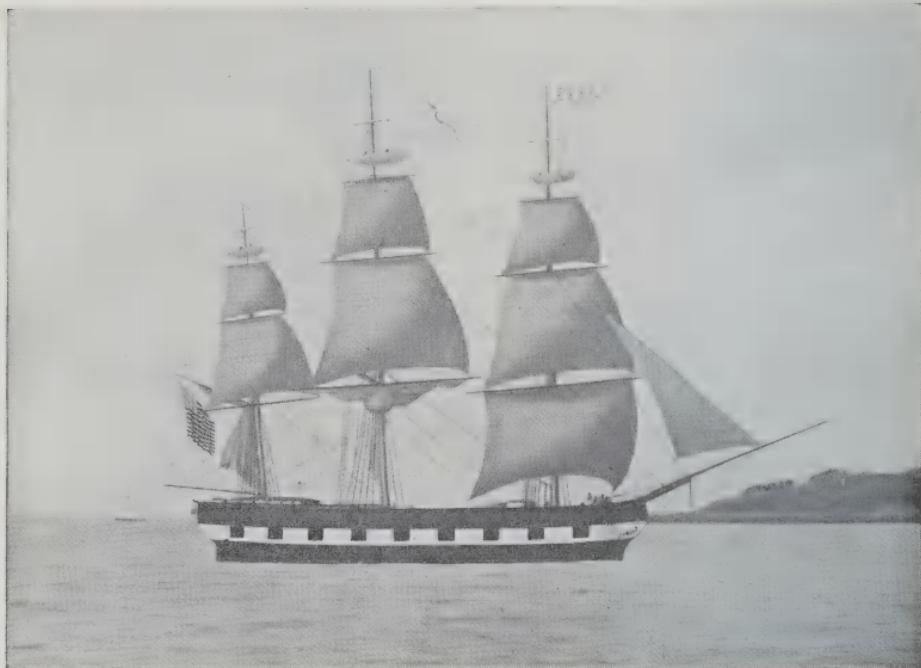
\$24,001.08. In 1805, the ship "Argo" brought a cargo of sugar, from the same port, on which the duty was \$32,799.47. In 1812, a duty of \$51,526.33 was paid on the cargo of the "Restitution," from Calcutta. The Calcutta trade was afterwards carried on principally by Joseph Peabody, in the famous ship "George," which made twenty-one voyages to Calcutta, the sum of \$651,743.32 duties being paid on her cargoes.

**Java and Japan.** The first American vessel to open trade with Batavia was the Salem brig "Sally," Benjamin Webb, master, in 1796, which brought home pepper and sugar. The ship "Margaret," Samuel Derby, master, was the first (1801) Salem vessel to visit Japan; and the ship "Franklin" of Boston, commanded by Capt.

James Devereux of Salem, was one of the first American vessels to visit Japan, though commercial intercourse was not opened between the two countries until half a century later.

**Pepper Trade.** Salem merchants sent the first vessel that ever sailed direct from this country to Sumatra, and the first to bring a cargo of pepper from that island. This trade originated in the discovery, in 1793, by Capt. Jonathan Carnes, that pepper grew wild on the northwestern coast of Sumatra. He sailed for Jonathan Peele, who at once built the schooner "Rajah," and sent Capt. Carnes to Sumatra for a cargo of pepper. For the purpose of trade, he took a cargo of brandy, gin, iron, tobacco and salmon, and in 1796, brought back the first cargo of pepper to be imported into this country in bulk. The cargo sold at seven hundred per cent profit. The merchants were greatly excited over Mr. Peele's success, and endeavored to learn where the pepper had been obtained, but it was kept a secret for several years. The ship "Eliza," James Cook, master, brought from Sumatra a cargo of 1,012,148 pounds of pepper, on which a duty of \$66,903.90 was paid. At one time the trade with Sumatra was almost entirely carried on by Salem merchants, and a large proportion of the pepper consumed was obtained at, and through the port of Salem, which was the distributing point for that article to all countries. Cargoes of pepper were regularly brought to Salem from Sumatra until 1846. Salem vessels were at Sumatra for the last time in 1860, and the last American vessel that visited that coast was commanded by a Salem captain. This was in 1867. (*See "Pepper and Pirates" by James Duncan Phillips.*)

**Manila.** The Manila trade was opened in 1796. The ship "Astrea," Henry Prince, master, returned to Salem that year with a cargo of 75,000 pounds of sugar, 63,695 pounds of pepper, and 29,767 pounds of indigo, the import duty being \$24,020. The ship "St. Paul," owned by Stephen C. Phillips, was almost as famous in the Manila trade as was the ship "George" in the Calcutta trade. The last entry in Salem from Manila was the bark "Dragon" in 1858, with a cargo of hemp.



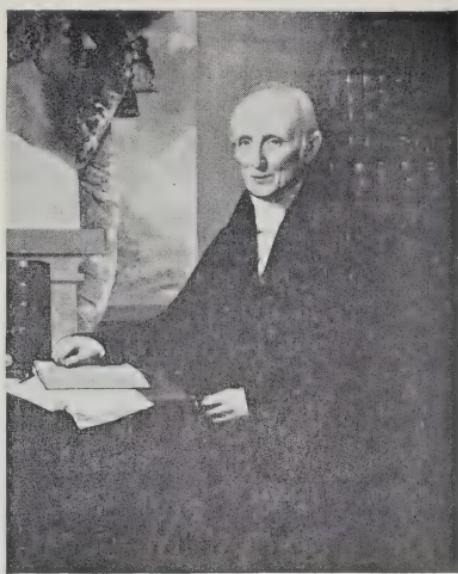
SHIP "ST. PAUL," BUILT IN 1833

**Mocha.** The Mocha trade was opened in 1798 by the ship "Recovery," Joseph Ropes, master, which was the first American vessel to display the stars and stripes in that part of the world. The ship "Franklin," in 1808, brought from there a cargo of 532,365 pounds of coffee, consigned to Joseph Peabody, on which was paid a duty of \$26,618.25.

**The Embargo.** Trade with all those distant shores was firmly established and at its height when, in 1808, the Jeffersonian embargo was placed upon our seaports. The whole trade was thus suddenly stopped, in some instances never to be reopened; and in all its branches to be pursued with less vigor and in a less degree. The trade in wine and brandy with Spain and Portugal, which had



JACOB CROWNINSHIELD  
By Hinckley



NATHANIEL BOWDITCH  
By Osgood



JOSEPH PEABODY  
By Osgood



NATHANIEL SILSBEY  
After Harding

continued for a century, was wholly stopped by the embargo, the last entry being in 1809 from Bilbao. Of the trade with other European ports, the last entry from Bordeaux occurred in 1815, from Copenhagen in 1816, from Amsterdam in 1823, from Hamburg in 1828, from Rotterdam in 1834, from Antwerp in 1836, from Gothenburg in 1837, from Marseilles in 1833, from Messina in 1831, and from Leghorn in 1841.

**Fiji Islands.** The Fiji Islands trade was first opened in 1811, by the bark "Active," Capt. William P. Richardson, and was continued until 1854, when the bark "Dragon" brought from there a cargo of 1,170 bales of hemp.

**East Coast of Africa.** The first American vessel to trade at Madagascar was the Salem brig "Beulah," Charles Forbes, master, in 1820. In 1827, Salem merchants extended this trade to Zanzibar. Gum-copal was its staple article of export. The last cargo to arrive at Salem from Zanzibar was entered in 1870. The Australian trade was commenced in 1832, by the Salem ship "Tybee," Charles Millet, master, at Sydney. She was the first American vessel to enter Australian ports. The trade came to an end in 1837. Considerable trade was carried on with Nova Scotia from about 1840 to 1857, and for nearly ten years following 1837, Salem was engaged in the whale fisheries.

**Commercial Decline.** Among the places early traded with by the colonists, the last entry from the West Indies was from Havana in 1854, and the last from the Rio Grande was in 1870. The South American trade, which also began early, finally ended in 1877. The last entry from Para occurred in 1861, the cargo consisting of rubber, hides, cocoa, coffee and castana nuts. The trade with Montevideo, in hides and horns, which began in 1811, also ended in 1861. The sugar trade with Pernambuco ended in 1841. Trade on the west coast of Africa, which began soon after the close of the Revolution by conveying thither New England rum, gunpowder and tobacco, closed in 1873. The increase in the size of

ships, which the harbor of Salem could not accomodate, together with the development of railroads and the building up of centers of trade, all contributed to the decline of Salem's commerce.

The whole aspect of the old maritime section of Salem is now changed. Some of the old shops on Derby street remain, dingy



SHIP "MINDORO," THE LAST OF SALEM'S SQUARE RIGGERS

and worn, and some of the warehouses nearby were destroyed in the great fire of 1914 and others have been transformed into coal sheds, coal being now the principal article of importation, but the influence of the energy, enterprise, fearlessness and far-sightedness of the old-time merchants will remain for centuries.

**Shipbuilding.** From the outset Salem was as noted for ship-building as for commercial enterprise, and vessels were built here continuously from the time of settlement, although none were of great size. The first ship-building was on Salem Neck, where Richard Hollingworth built vessels in 1641, and Joseph Hardy built the "American Merchant," 160 tons, in 1709. Vessels were built at favorite points along the shore line, at the foot of Liberty street, Elm street, and at Frye's mills (now Goodhue street) at the railroad crossing. The more important ship-yards were on lower Derby street and in South Salem on the land now covered by the Naumkeag mills. On the latter site were the yards of Enos and Elijah Briggs from 1790, and of E. F. Miller and Joshua Brown in the 1850's. Enos Briggs built the second "Grand Turk," 564 tons, known as "Mr. Derby's great ship," in 1791, and the frigate "Essex" in 1799, 860 tons, the largest vessel ever built in Salem. The latter ship was built on Winter Island, near the site of the present coast guard base. E. F. Miller in South Salem built the "Guide," the "Glide," and the "Taria Topan," for Capt. John Bertram. The Becketts were, in many respects, the most noted ship-builders in this region, for some member of the family was continuously in the business from 1655 until 1887 in the same locality, near Phillips wharf. Retire Becket was the most noted member of the family from 1798 until 1818. He built the ships "Mount Vernon," "Margaret," privateer "America," and George Crowninshield's yacht "Cleopatra's Barge." Among the larger vessels built by Miller from 1850-1870 were the "Jersey," 599 tons, and the "Taria Topan," 631 tons. None of the great clipper ships, however, were built in Salem; the waters were too shallow.

## CHAPTER IV

### SALEM ARCHITECTURE

**Architectural Periods.** To the student of architecture, the buildings in Salem arrange themselves into four classes. First, those very old houses, built by early settlers in the most primitive times, possessing all the dignity and simplicity and, withall, the barrenness of the Puritan character, and round which cluster many strange and curious traditions; second, those built between the earlier years of the 18th century and the beginning of the Revolution, exhibiting the influence of the architect from over-seas and usually containing fine interior wood finish; third, those built in post-Revolutionary days, usually by rich merchants and ship owners, when Salem had become an important commercial center, and in which the “Federalist” style is exhibited in its very flower: and fourth, those purely modern structures—confused, chaotic—which have sprung up everywhere replacing the earlier types.

**Pickering House.** Of the older buildings a number of excellent examples have survived. The oldest, without doubt, is the Pickering house (18 Broad street) which is one of the few remaining examples of the many-gabled houses with steep roofs evidently built in imitation of the Gothic half-timbered cottages of England. The steep roof was very common in early days, at first a necessity because of the use of thatch as a covering, and later surviving as a fashion of the earlier period. The east side of the house was erected in 1651 and the west side in 1660 by John Pickering and has been inhabited ever since by his lineal descendants. The present “peaked windows” and the exterior finish were added in 1841, when extensive alterations were made. An iron fireback for a fireplace in this house, cast in 1660 by Joseph Jenks of Saugus, the first iron founder in the colonies, is preserved at the Essex Institute.

Col. Timothy Pickering, soldier and statesman, was born here in 1745. He was quarter master general of the Continental Army and Postmaster General, Secretary of War and of State in Washington's cabinet, and also retained the state portfolio in the cabinet of John Adams.



BIRTHPLACE OF TIMOTHY PICKERING

**Pickman House** stood at the rear of 165 Essex street, was built by Col. Benjamin Pickman in 1743. It was beautifully furnished and decorated, and each stair was finished with a carved and gilded codfish (see examples preserved in the museums of the Essex Institute and Peabody Museum) indicating the source of his affluence. Governor Pownall was entertained here Oct. 22, 1757; Gen. Benedict Arnold, 1775; Count Castiglioni, June 23, 1784; and Alexander Hamilton, June 20, 1800.

**17th Century Houses.** Most of the 17th century dwellings built in Salem were plain and prim. The huge bulk of the chim-

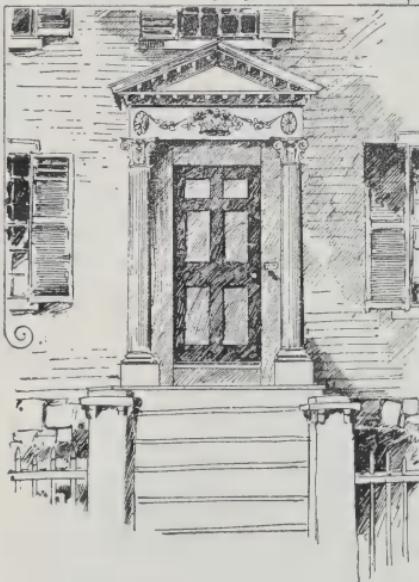
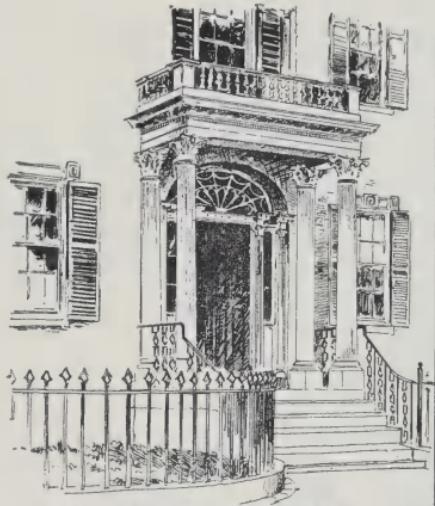
ney occupied the centre of the house. Two rooms on the first floor two on the second, and an unfinished attic, supplied the needs of the average family. With the necessity for more room came the lean-to, a one-story addition, built on one side of the house and introducing the long sloping roof. An excellent example of this type of dwelling may be seen in the *Narbonne house* (71 Essex street) which was built before 1671. The Dutch door in the lean-to at the end towards the street, formerly was the entrance to a "cent shop," a Salem institution until seventy-five years ago which has been intimately pictured in Hawthorne's "*House of the Seven Gables*." The house built in 1684 by John Ward, and now preserved in the garden of the Essex Institute, is of similar type, save that it preserves the overhanging second story, the best example now to be seen in Salem. (*See the John Ward House, in the chapter on the Essex Institute, p. 109.*) The *Witch house* at the corner of North and Essex streets should also be mentioned, being of this type. (*See chapter on Witchcraft, p. 22.*) A similar house containing interesting carved timbers may be seen in the garden at the "*House of the Seven Gables*" (54 Turner street) it having been removed from its original location, 23 Washington street. It was built in the spring of 1683 by Benjamin Hooper. The original portion extends only as far as the second story overhangs the first, the large chimney being at the eastern end. The spaces between the studding are filled with bricks set in clay and laths split from the logs are still found in the attic stairway. The oaken corner posts are shouldered and the chamfered edges of the exposed timbers exhibit an attempt at carved ornamentation, while the ends of the timbers supporting the over-hanging second story are carved into a bracket form and are embellished in a simple yet attractive manner. Two generations ago there existed in Salem many fine examples of this early period now supplanted by modern buildings and the student who may wish to pursue this subject farther will find much information in local historical publications and in the collections of photographs and drawings preserved at the Essex Institute.

**Early 18th Century Houses.** The type of dwelling that began to be erected in the middle of the 18th century shows marked differences from the steep-roofed, low-studded houses of the earlier period. The finely illustrated works of famous European architects were finding their way into the hands of New England carpenter-architects, and the increasing wealth of the Provincial merchants was demanding for them larger and better houses, fitted to a more luxurious style of living. It is natural, therefore, that the older type of house should have been set aside and trans-Atlantic fashions in building have been modified and been engrafted upon our soil. The best houses built during those years of development, for of course it is only the best houses which are to be considered as worthy of being included in any architectural classification, were square, box-shaped structures with hipped roofs. With these houses came the introduction of fine interior finish, with splendid staircases and delicately carved newelposts and balusters. The staircase with a broken flight and landing-window was also introduced, afterwards developing into the direct run with a curved upper portion, or even into a full spiral from the base. Only a few of these fine old mansions have survived the changes of taste and the necessities of business. The best example, although the doorway is a recent adaptation, is the *Cabot-Endicott-Low-Ives-Parker house* (365 Essex street), which was built by Joseph Cabot in 1748 after designs supplied, it is said, by an English architect. Still another house of this period may be seen at the corner of Derby and Herbert streets. It was built about 1740 and long occupied by Richard Derby and the Ward family, prominent merchants of Salem. The *Richard Derby house*, a brick house on Derby street, was built by Richard Derby, for his son Elias Hasket Derby. It contains fine pine panelling of the period, and is open to visitors daily on payment of a small fee.

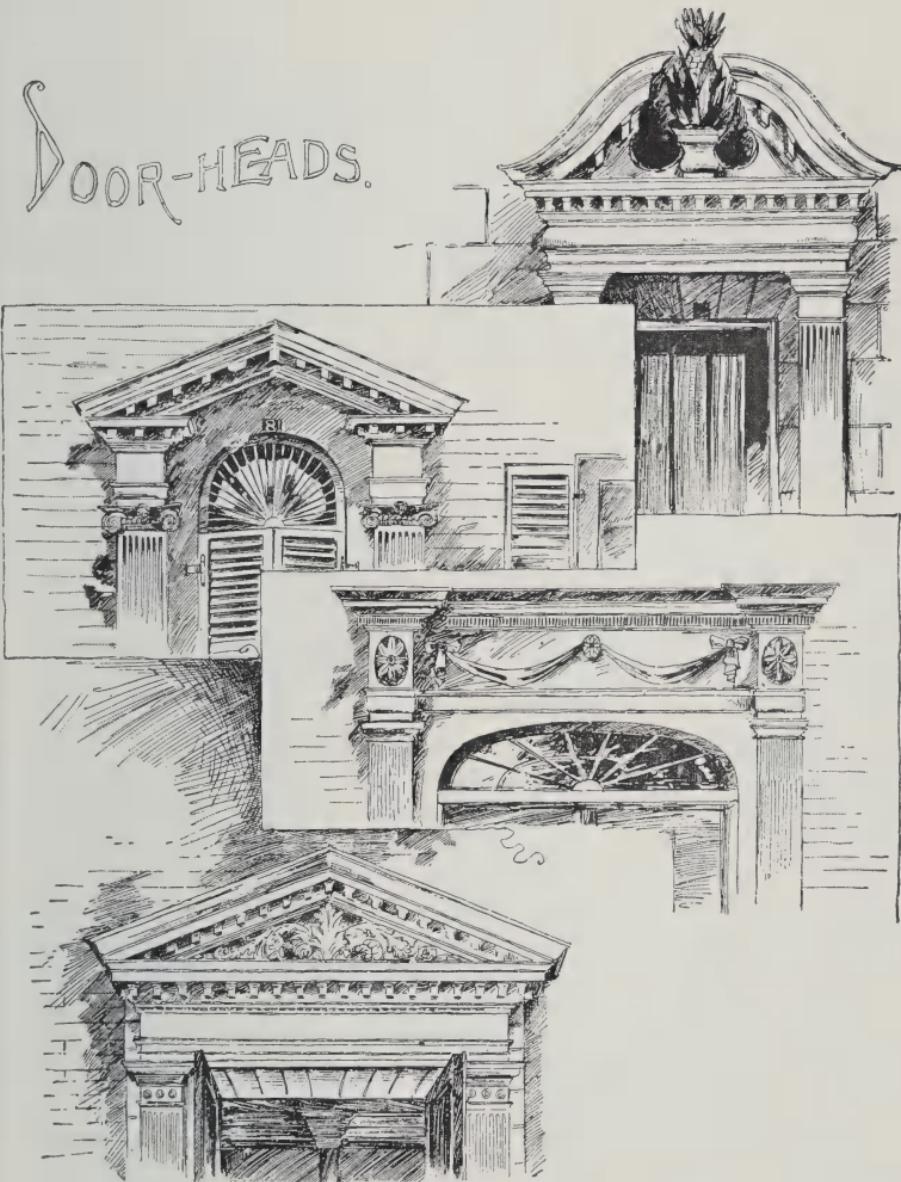
**Post-Revolutionary Houses.** Of the third period into which the architecture of Salem may be divided there is a wealth of example, and the stranger with an eye for the beautiful will not

fail to be impressed with the architectural stateliness of many of the houses erected over a century ago. They are not of the colonial period, but belong to the time when Salem was mistress of the seas, when her commerce reached its high-water mark in the years between the close of the Revolution and the second decade of the 19th century. Most of the finest of these old houses were built during that period. They reflect the hopeful spirit, the wide outlook, and the fine taste of the early years of the republic. Nothing quite like these old dwellings is to be found in domestic architecture outside of New England, and nowhere in so large a number and perfection as in Salem. Chestnut street and Washington Square present the finest examples. They are built of wood and brick, invariably three stories in height, with the third story foreshortened, and are square or oblong, with a hipped roof crowned by a deck usually surrounded by a decorative balustrade of posts and palings. The owners of these houses, if not themselves shipmasters, were or had been ship owners, and felt the need of an elevated place from which they might watch for the incoming of their latest "venture." In fact, the deck roof is but an architectural modification of the cupola which, in simple or complex form, is a common feature of the architecture of seacoast towns of New England. An interesting example of the use of the cupola formerly could be seen on the *Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse* mansion (70 Washington street) built in 1764 and taken down in 1915. The cupola is now preserved in the garden of the Essex Institute. In one of the windows of the cupola a space is left through which a spy-glass could be used to watch for incoming ships. The arched ceiling of this "look out" is decorated with a fresco, painted by Corné, picturing the fleet of vessels owned by the wealthy occupant.

**Porches and Doorways.** The severe architectural lines of these houses are sometimes relieved by broad horizontal bands of brickwork at each floor-level, or by pilasters at the corners and often by a simple form of window ornamentation. But the chief external decoration of what would otherwise be a facade plain



# DOOR-HEADS.



almost to barrenness, is the porch or doorway. Upon this is expended a high degree of art. The fine effect of these old porches and doorways is due to their harmony of form and proportion and also to the beautiful wood carving which they display. The adaptation of the Grecian column in its varied forms gives to them great dignity and a large degree of originality and discrimination is often displayed. The carving of the capitals also in many instances is most artistic in design and execution.

The carving on these Salem porches is not confined to the capitals of the columns, but adorns the architrave—as on the porch of the old *Assembly House* (138 Federal street) with its tasteful grapevine pattern. Sometimes the carving is on the pediment or is arranged about the door itself, as in the dainty work over the door of the *Kimball house* (14 Pickman street). For simple grace and a certain Puritan charm of aspect, the most attractive of all Salem doorways are those narrow ones with plain or fluted pilasters on either side surmounted by a pediment, the dark panelled door offset with burnished brass knocker and handle and protected oftentimes by long green blinds. The most elaborate of the doorways of this variety is that of the *Cabot-Endicott-Low-Ives-Parker house*, the pediment of which, later added, is richly carved. But there are many attractive examples of a similar design on smaller houses—picturesque and inviting. The type of porch which wins universal admiration for its gracefulness and charm of outline is the semi-circular porch, of which the *Andrew-Safford mansion* (13 Washington square) now the property of the Essex Institute, and the *Tucker-Rice house*, now the clubhouse of the Father Mathew Society (129 Essex street) afford the best examples. The latter is now preserved in the garden of the Essex Institute. No porch is so successful as this type in softening the severity of outline of these oldtime mansions.

Besides these typical forms there are certain individual doorways, like the old pineapple doorway, formerly in Brown street court, and now preserved in the Essex Institute Museum; the fine

porch of the *Col. George Peabody house*, now the Bertram Home for Aged Men (29 Washington square), remarkable for the beauty of its carved Corinthian capitals; the porch of the *Silsbee house* (35 Washington square) with chaste Ionic columns; and the *Peirce-Nichols house* (80 Federal street), the porch standing just within high gate-posts crowned with shapely urns. These, with many others, invite inspection.

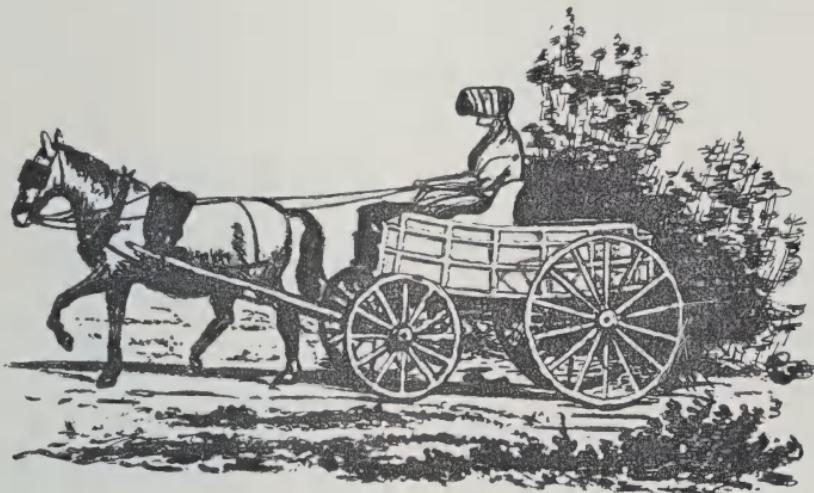
**Woodcarving.** The art of woodcarving was developed in Salem to a high degree of perfection in the later years of the 18th and the early years of the 19th centuries, in connection with shipbuilding, which attracted skilled wood carvers who found constant employment in the busy yards. It was their creative art that produced the decorative mouldings that adorned the ship's cabin. They also fashioned the figureheads that gave dignity and individuality to the bow of every merchantman.

**Samuel McIntire**, who died in 1811, was the most accomplished of the Salem wood carvers. Several examples of his skill may be seen at the Essex Institute: a medallion head of Washington, formerly a decoration on the Common gate; an eagle that spread its wings before the Custom House on Central street; a mantel taken from the old Registry of Deeds building, and various architectural details. McIntire was also an architect of great ability and designed the South Church (destroyed by fire in 1903) and the famous Derby mansion (taken down about 1814). He also submitted plans in competition for the Capitol at Washington, the original drawings now being preserved by the Maryland Historical Society. Of the many houses in Salem which he designed, the best examples now standing are the *Peirce-Nichols house* (80 Federal street) and the *Pingree house* (128 Essex street) the interior finish in both being remarkably fine. Both of these houses are owned by the Essex Institute and may be seen on application. (See "Mr. Samuel McIntire, the Architect of Salem" by Fiske Kimball.)

**Interior Wood Finish.** In houses of such dignity and refinement there is, of course, much beautiful interior woodwork, the staircase being the crowning feature, with newel posts, rails and balusters carved with infinite delicacy. The box-stairs, while not a feature peculiar to Salem, here may be found in great variety of treatment, and particular attention is always given to the stair-ends. A curious and interesting example of the latter existed in former times in the *Pickman house* (165 Essex street), built in 1743 and of which only a portion of the exterior walls remain standing. An archway with fluted columns, taken from this house, is preserved at the Essex Institute, where it breaks the wall between the picture gallery and the museum. This interior woodwork was always made of white pine, which grew in abundance along the New England coast. No wood is more delightful to work and few woods better withstand the passage of time, but however responsive the medium, it was the skill, ingenuity, and mathematical knowledge displayed in working out the turned and twisted newel posts and balusters that contributed most to the fine result. The variety and delicacy of design exhibited in this carved work make the Salem staircase incomparably more interesting than staircases found elsewhere. The staircase leading to the galleries in the museum hall of the Essex Institute was taken from a house on Charter street, built in 1773, and is a fine example of the work of that period.

**Ship Carvers.** It has already been suggested that much of this interior finish was the handiwork of the carvers employed in the local shipyards. Aside from their dexterity in handling carving tools, which was not so likely to be acquired by any class of artisan other than the ship carvers, the fact that these twisted balusters are so evidently based upon rope forms would remind one that these carvers habitually made use of the rope-moulding, both hawser-laid and cable-laid in cabin fittings and in the flamboyant decorations about the old-fashioned cabin galleries and the figure-heads at the bow, and it would not be difficult for the ingenious-minded man to pass from the cutting of a cable-laid moulding to

the working out of a twisted newel-post. Much of the refinement and delicacy of work may be attributed, however, to the temperamental and inherited conscientiousness of the Yankee workman and that peculiar wide-awakeness and native ingenuity which causes the artisans of their blood to work with their heads as much as with their hands, and with all their perceptions on the alert to do things in the best way.



MRS. SPENCER, MAKER OF THE FAMOUS SALEM GIBRALTAR CANDY AND HER WAGON.

## CHAPTER V

### HAWTHORNE

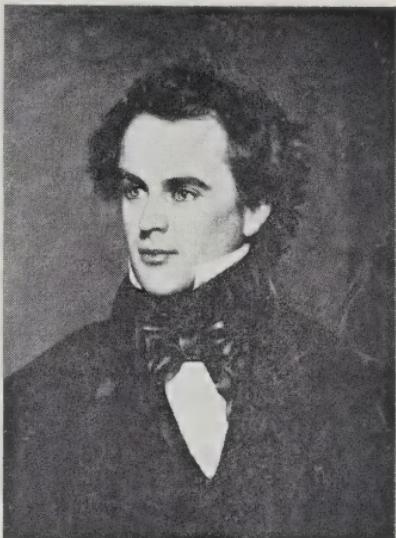
THREE things more than all others draw the visitor to Salem: the romantic interest connected with the East India commerce and the old-time ships; the weird fascination of the witchcraft delusion; the birthplace of Hawthorne, the spots associated with his life and the places referred to in his works. The latter is perhaps a greater attraction than any of the others, and to aid the visitor in his searches here, this chapter has been prepared. As those familiar with Hawthorne's writings well know, the places described in his stories and sketches are idealized and often glorified by the wealth of his vivid imagination, and this the visitor should always keep in mind when looking upon the bare reality of the scenes which suggested his fancies.

Thoughtless critics often condemn Salem for not sooner appreciating its native author. But why should Salem have seen what no one else saw? Hawthorne left Salem, finally in 1850, before the publication of "The Scarlet Letter." He was retiring in disposition to the point of shyness,—objected to being lionized, and shrank ungraciously from social attentions. He had almost always written anonymously, and was comparatively unknown to the world, and when he did gain public recognition, having changed the familiar spelling of his name from Hathorne to Hawthorne, the name was supposed, even by old friends, to be an assumed one.

This love of seclusion was a family trait, and Hawthorne's life was surrounded by its influences,—the grieving widowed mother and the shrinking sister,—and the wonder is that the effect was not seriously injurious to that life. A remote connection of Hawthorne, writing in the New York *Observer* in 1887, in describing her visits to the Herbert street house, among many other interest-



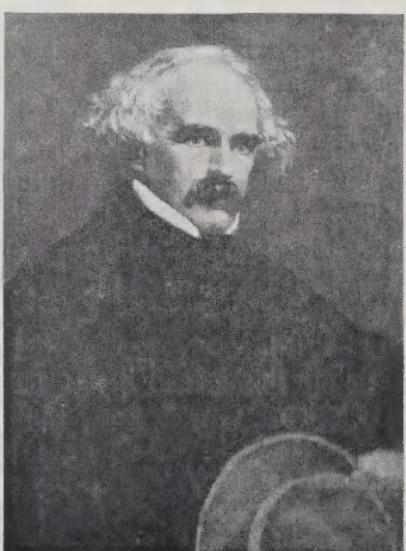
NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE  
Class silhouette at Bowdoin College  
1825



NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE  
By Charles Osgood in 1840



NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE  
By G. P. A. Healey in 1852



NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE  
After photograph about 1863  
Essex Institute Picture Gallery

ing reminiscences of Hawthorne's boyhood, says: "I never heard him allude to school life, or mention any boy companions. In neither of my visits did I meet boy or girl of my own age. I believe that his surroundings favored his love of isolation, and made him the author of the "Marble Faun."

**Periods of Residence.** Nathaniel Hawthorne was born in the house now numbered 27 Union street, Salem, July 4, 1804. In 1808 his widowed mother, with her children, removed to a house directly at the rear of this, but facing Herbert, the next street to the eastward and parallel to Union: it has since then been remodeled for a tenement house and numbered 10½ and 12. He lived here until 1818, then at Raymond, Maine, for a short time, returning to the Herbert street house in 1819-20. He was at Bowdoin College, 1821 to 1825, and it was about this last date that the "w" first appeared in his name. He was after this at the Herbert street house a short time; then from 1828 to 1832 in a house on Dearborn street, now removed to a site opposite the spot upon which it originally stood and numbered 26. He was in the Herbert street house in 1838, and again for short periods in 1840 and 1846. In 1839 and 1840 he was in the Boston Custom House and resided in Boston. In 1841 he was at Brook Farm, West Roxbury. He married Sophia Amelia Peabody in Boston, July 9, 1842, and went to live at the "Old Manse," Concord, Mass., where their eldest daughter, Una, was born. He came back to Salem in the fall of 1845, was appointed surveyor of the Port of Salem and Beverly, 1846, and his son Julian was born in Boston during that year. While serving at the Salem Custom House he lived first in the old homestead in Herbert street, then in the house numbered 18 Chestnut street, and finally in the house numbered 14 Mall street. He lost the Custom House position in 1849, and was in Lenox in 1850-51, where his younger daughter, Rose (Mrs. Lathrop), was born. He lived in West Newton, where the "Blithedale Romance" was written, in 1851-52, and settled in his last American home, the "Wayside," in Concord, in 1852. He became American

Consul at Liverpool in 1853, and retained that office until 1857. He then travelled in Italy, rested in Rome and Florence, and returned to England, where, in 1859, he completed the "Marble Faun." In July, 1860, he returned to the "Wayside," where he passed the few remaining years of his life. He died quietly in his sleep in the early morning hours of May 19, 1864, at the Pemigewasset House, at Plymouth, N. H., while travelling for his health with his old friend and classmate, ex-President Pierce. He was buried four days later in "Sleepy Hollow," Concord, Massachusetts

**The Birthplace.** Hawthorne was born in the northwest chamber in the second story of the gambrel-roofed house now numbered 27 on the eastern side of Union street. The house was built prior to the time of the witchcraft delusion, by one of several Salem citizens who have borne the name of Benjamin Pickman. It came into the possession of the grandfather of Hawthorne in 1772 and, with the exception of a modern front door with long glass panels, and of modern windows, the house is in about the same condition as when the great author was born. In 1808 Hawthorne's father died at Surinam, while on a voyage in command of the brig "Nabby," and the family removed to the

**Herbert Street House** (now numbered 10½ and 12) then owned by Hawthorne's maternal grandfather, Richard Manning. This house was built about 1790; it faces on Herbert street, but adjoins the "Birthplace" at the rear. It is stated in Mrs. Elizabeth Manning's article on "The Boyhood of Hawthorne," in the

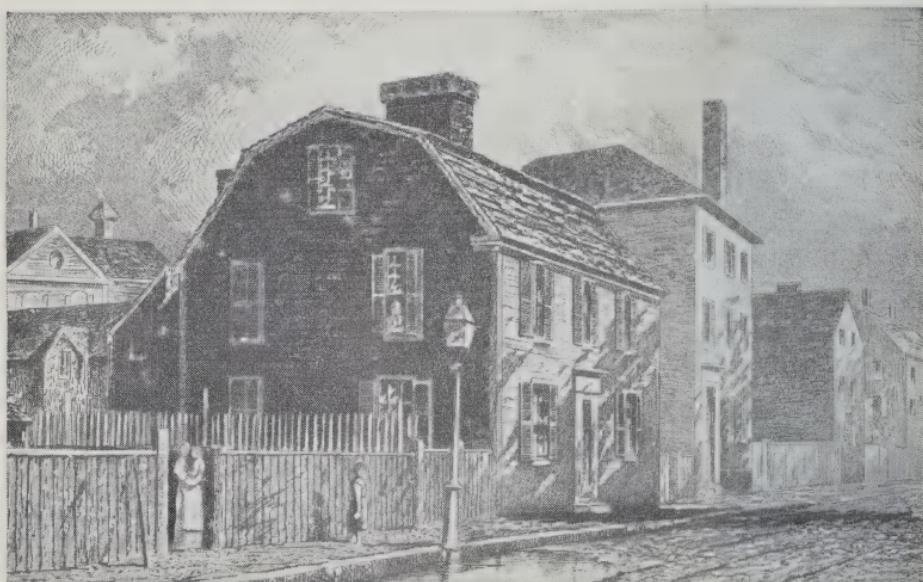
## FANSHAWE,

### A TALE.

"With thee go we with me?"—SOUTHEY.

BOSTON:  
MARSH & CAPEN, 862 WASHINGTON STREET.  
FRIENDS OF PUTNAM AND BURT.  
1828.

Title Page of Hawthorne's  
First Romance



BIRTHPLACE OF NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE, 27 UNION STREET

"Wide Awake" for November, 1891, that Hawthorne's room was "in the southwest corner of the third floor, overlooking his birthplace," and that "he scratched his name with a diamond" on a pane of glass in one of its windows.\*

It is the chamber in this Herbert street house which is referred to in the "American Notes" under the date 1836—and not the one in the Union street house, as stated by the editor—in the sentence: "In this dismal chamber FAME was won," and again, in the often quoted letter written October 4, 1840: "Here I sit in my old accustomed chamber, where I used to sit in days gone by. Here I have written many tales . . . Should I have a biographer he ought to make great mention of this chamber in my memoirs, because so much of my lonely youth was wasted here."

\*This pane has been removed and is now at the Essex Institute.

This chamber is again referred to in a humorous vein: "Salem April, 1843. . . . Here I am, in my old chamber, where I produced those stupendous works of fiction which have since impressed the universe with wonderment and awe! To this chamber, doubtless, in all succeeding ages, pilgrims will come to pay their tribute of reverence: they will put off their shoes at the threshold for fear of desecrating the tattered old carpets! 'There,' they will exclaim, 'is the very bed in which he slumbered, and where he was visited by those ethereal visions, which he afterwards fixed forever in glowing words. There is the washstand at which this exalted personage cleansed himself from the stains of earth and rendered his outward man a fitting exponent of the pure soul within. There, in its mahogany frame, is the dressing-glass which often reflected that noble brow, those hyacinthine locks, that mouth bright with smiles or tremulous with feeling, that flashing or melting eye, that—in short, every item of the magnanimous face of this unexampled man. There is the pine table—there the old flag-bottomed chair on which he sat, at which he scribbled, during his agonies of inspiration! There is the old chest of drawers in which he kept what shirts a poor author may be supposed to have possessed! There is the closet in which was deposited his threadbare suit of black! There is the worn-out shoe brush with which this polished writer polished his boots. There is—but I believe this will be pretty much all, so here I close the catalogue.'"

But pilgrims do not come here "to pay their tribute of reverence," nor to "put off their shoes at the threshold for fear of desecrating the tattered old carpets." The birthplace receives the homage of the visitor. It was while a boy, in the Herbert street house, that Hawthorne used to play in the discarded coaches which belonged to his uncle Manning's stage company, whose stables were near by on Union street. It was in the Herbert street house that he lived at various times while a boy and a young man, and twice for brief periods later, between his service at the Boston Custom House and his Brook Farm life, and in 1845-46, just before taking

\* American Notes. Ticknor & Field's Edition, Vol. II, p. 113.



B. LYNDE OLIVER, ESQ.

the position of surveyor in the Salem Custom House. It therefore seemed like home to him.

In youth Hawthorne received an injury to his foot which compelled him for a while to remain quietly at home. At this time the famous lexicographer, J. E. Worcester, kept a school in Salem, near the First Baptist Church on Federal street, which Hawthorne attended, and during the time of this injury Mr. Worcester frequently went to the Herbert street house to teach his lame pupil. The residence in Raymond, Maine, followed, but, in 1819, Hawthorne returned to Salem. He prepared for Bowdoin College, under the care of the Salem lawyer, B. Lynde Oliver, Esq., and entered that institution in 1821, graduating in 1825. It was during the next period of his life, closing in 1838, that he acted as a clerk for the stage company which the Mannings largely owned, travelled about in the stages, wrote stories, and anonymously published "Fanshawe,"

and the first volume of "Twice Told Tales." This house is associated with nearly all the important events of Hawthorne's early life and it is to be regretted that it could not be preserved otherwise than in its present condition.

Hawthorne was ever returning to this Herbert street house; he spent more of his days there than in any other, and it might rightly be called his home, for in the words of his son and biographer: "In fact, after freeing himself from Salem, Hawthorne never found any permanent rest anywhere."\*

During his life in Herbert street, Hawthorne was very intimate in the family of a kinsman and neighbor who occupied the spacious

\* Hawthorne and His Wife, Vol. I, p. 429.

colonial residence, the Miles Ward house, corner Derby and Herbert streets, with its garden of the old-fashioned sort, at the foot of the street, now completely changed in appearance, where a chamber was devoted to him, and, when he liked he remained at the house and ate and slept there. He wrote much in this chamber and in a still more favorite place, the old garden, where he often sat musing and writing in a quaint little summer-house embowered in lilaes and syringas, and shaded by an ancient apple tree. It is probable that some of his earlier stories were written at this house or under the tree in its garden.

**Dearborn Street House.** From 1828 to 1832 he lived with his mother in a house which was built for Madam Hathorne by her brother on land adjoining the present Manning homestead on Dearborn street. It was afterward sold and moved to the opposite side of the street, where, numbered 26, it may be seen today.

**Chestnut Street House.** Little interest attaches to the house numbered 18 Chestnut street, which was taken temporarily by the Hawthornes in 1846. Their son Julian was born in Boston in June of that year, the "Old Manse" having been given up in 1845. This house, occupied in all about sixteen months, seems to have little connection with his literary work. April 23, 1847, Mrs. Hawthorne wrote, while in this house: "We may have to stay here during the summer after all. Birds *do* visit our trees in Chestnut street, and Una talks incessantly about flowers and fields." This house has been considerably altered since Hawthorne lived



THE MALL STREET HOUSE

in it. While here, to avoid callers whom he did not care to see, Hawthorne would often slip out of the back door which opened on the little court running from Chestnut to Essex street, and go into the house of his friend and neighbor, Dr. Benjamin F. Brown, at the other end of the court, remaining there until the visitor had gone.

**Mall Street House.** The family moved to the house numbered 14 Mall street in September, 1847. The quiet "study" which Hawthorne was to have to himself, and which made this house so desirable, was the front room in the third story next the street. Here the volume entitled "The Snow Image" was prepared and "The Scarlet Letter" was written. It was a house from which the Hawthornes expected much joy, but reaped, instead, sadness and financial distress, although lasting literary fame and public recognition were achieved there. He received the Custom House appointment in March, 1846, and retained it until June, 1849, when he writes, "I am turned out of office." It was to this house he went home to make the significant announcement to his wife. Upon hearing it, she said, "Very well, now you can write your romance." At the same time, and in answer to Hawthorne's query as to how they should live meanwhile, she opened the bureau drawer and showed him the gold she had saved from the portion of his salary which, from time to time, he had placed in her hands. The "romance" was "The Scarlet Letter." It was written under extraordinary pressure; for dismissal from office, pecuniary distress, Madam Hawthorne's death, July 31, 1849, and severe personal illness, afflicted the author "midway in its composition."

It was in "a chamber over the sitting room" that James T. Fields found Hawthorne despondent and "hovering near a stove," and had the fateful conversation with him detailed in "Yesterdays with Authors."\* After great reluctance and repeated refusals,—so doubtful was he of the success of his greatest work,—Hawthorne gave Fields the manuscript of "The Scarlet Letter." It was immediately published. Knowing these facts, one must look upon this house

\* Page 49.

with feelings of the deepest interest. The house and its surroundings have hardly changed since Hawthorne left it, in 1850, to reside in Lenox.

**Grimshawe House, Charter Street.** During the days of Hawthorne's courtship, his future wife, Sophia Amelia Peabody, the daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Peabody, lived in the large house numbered 53 Charter street, adjoining on its eastern and southern bounds, "Burying Point," the oldest cemetery in Salem. Hawthorne was not married in this house, but at 13 West street, in Boston, which at that time was the residence of Dr. Peabody. The Charter street house has become a lodging house, having been remodeled for that purpose after a fire in 1915 which burnt out the interior; externally the house somewhat retains its old form. Mrs. Hawthorne was born September 21, 1809, in a house on Summer street, Salem, (so says her sister, Miss Elizabeth Peabody, in a private letter), but in 1812 the family moved to one of the houses of the large brick block on Union street, extending from Essex, but a stone's throw from the birthplace of Hawthorne. Being neighbors, the children of the two families played together while the Hawthornes lived in the Herbert street house, but they saw little of each other after 1818 until they met again as old friends in the Charter street house in 1838. It is singular that Hawthorne, who must have had most delightful associations connected with this house, should have recalled its situation in the unpleasant and imperfect "Dolliver Romance," and in its still more disagreeable presentment in "Dr.



Porch of the "Grimshawe" house, preserved in the Essex Institute garden.

Grimshawe's Secret." Yet there it surely appears described in the first chapter of the latter story as "cornered on a graveyard, with which the house communicated by a back door," and so it may be seen today. "a three-story wooden house, perhaps a century old, low-studded, with a square front standing right upon the street, and a small enclosed porch, containing the main entrance, affording a glimpse up and down the street through an oval window on each side." After the fire in the house in 1915 this porch was secured for the out-door museum of the Essex Institute, where it now may be seen. Hawthorne evidently frequented the cemetery, for, besides incidental mention of it here and elsewhere in his works, there is an interesting note of his\* describing a visit to the place, as follows: "In the old burial-ground, Charter street, a slate gravestone, carved around the borders, to the memory of 'Col. John Hathorne, Esq.,' who died in 1717. This was the witch-judge. The stone is sunk deep into the earth, and leans forward, and the grass grows very long around it; and on account of the moss it was rather difficult to make out the date. . . . In a corner of the burial-ground, close under Dr. P—'s garden fence, are the most ancient stones remaining in the graveyard. One to 'Dr. John Swinnerton, Physician,' in 1688. . . . one of Nathaniel Mather, the younger brother of Cotton, and mentioned in the *Magnalia* as a hard student and of great promise. 'An aged man at nineteen years,' saith the gravestone.† It affected me deeply when I cleaned away the grass from the half-buried stone and read the name. . . . It gives strange ideas to think how convenient to Dr. P—'s family this burial ground is, the monument standing almost within arm's reach of the side windows of the parlor, and there being a little gate from the back yard through which we step forth upon these old graves aforesaid." The name of Dr. Swinnerton appears in the "Seven Gables," and again, as the ancient apothecary, with the sign of "the brazen serpent," in the "Dolliver Romance," and the name of his ancestor, Hathorne, the romancer has used as freely. The quotation from the "Notes" is reproduced in "Dr. Grimshaw's Secret."

\* American Note Books, Vol. I, p. 110.

† "An aged person that had seen but nineteen winters in the world," is the actual inscription.



THE TURNER-INGERSOLL HOUSE, KNOWN AS  
"THE HOUSE OF THE SEVEN GABLES"

**"House of the Seven Gables."** The object of greatest interest in Salem connected with Hawthorne, and the one for which inquiries are most frequently made, is "The House of the Seven Gables," a general belief existing that Hawthorne described some particular house which was standing in its declining age when he wrote the story which bears this title. The house numbered 54 Turner street, known as "The House of the Seven Gables," was for many years in the Ingersoll family, relatives of the Hawthornes, and Hawthorne was an habitual visitor there. It is said, that on one of these visits, his cousin, Miss Susan Ingersoll, told him that the house once had seven gables, and taking him to the attic, she showed him beams and mortices to prove the statement. Coming

down the crooked stairs, Hawthorne is said to have repeated, half aloud, "House of the Seven Gables,—that sounds well," and not long after the romance bearing this name appeared. That the romance had already taken shape before the name had been fully decided upon, is shown by a reference to the matter in a letter to a friend written by Hawthorne just before the publication of the work, where he says: "I am beginning to puzzle myself about a title to the book. The scene of it is in one of the old projecting-storied houses familiar to me in Salem.\* . . . I think of such title as 'The House of Seven Gables,' there being that number of gable ends to the old shanty; or 'Seven Gabled House,' or, simply, 'The Seven Gables.'" The name of the story which was then almost finished, as here indicated, might easily have been suggested by the visit to Miss Ingersoll in the Turner street house; but the house did not have seven gables in Hawthorne's day, nor the projecting stories he has described, and the idea must, therefore, have been suggested to him in some other way than by the house itself. Thus the romancer, while describing features which never existed in the Turner street house, amongst them a rough-cast ornament under the eaves,† which he took from the specimen now preserved in the Institute and saved by the Historical Society on the destruction of the "Colonel Browne mansion," or "Sun Tavern," built in 1698. At the same time he omits in the most significant manner, all allusion to some of the salient features of the Turner street house itself, where he sat through many a summer twilight in the sea-washed garden with his kinswoman, Miss Ingersoll, sniffing the aroma of kelp and eelgrass, so dear to every native

\* Hawthorne says in the preface to the "Seven Gables," he trusts not to offend "by laying out a street that infringes upon nobody's private rights, and appropriating a lot of land which had no visible owner, and building a house of materials long in use for constructing castles in the air," and he urges that the book "may be read strictly as a Romance, having a great deal more to do with the clouds overhead than with any portion of the actual soil of the County of Essex."

On a walk with his relative, Richard Manning, in the woods at Montserrat, Beverly, and repeated by Mr. Manning to the writer, Hawthorne said, in answer to an inquiry, "No, I did not describe any particular house when writing the story."

† *House of the Seven Gables.* p. 16.

of the seaboard, and had seen the ship's lights swinging lazily within hail in the inner harbor, and had heard the salt waves splash and ripple at his feet almost amongst the tree roots and flower beds of the ancient homestead.

The Eastern Land claim which figures largely in this story was an actual claim surviving in the author's family for generations, a tradition of his boyhood, and may be traced at the Registry of Deeds in Salem. As late as 1765 it purported to vest in the heirs of John Hathorn, merchant, Esquire, a "considerable tract lying between Dammariscotta and Sheep's Cutt Rivers, by the inlet Win-negance and the sea," to the head of northwest passage, "which makes about a Triangle," seven miles be it, more or less, "together with all the Lands, Islands and Isletts, Meadowes, and Harbours, Marshes, Housing, Fencings, Orchards, Gardens, Creeks, Coves and Rivers, con-[per]taining unto the same," with full rights to possess and enjoy forever the said "considerable parcel," and it was computed to be about 9,000 acres, as by deed from Robin Hood, an Indian sagamore, recorded June 16, 1666.

A story is told of another visit of Hawthorne's to the Turner street house, which connects it in an interesting way with the romance. A friend of his, an adopted son of Miss Ingersoll, who lived in the house at the time, one day fell asleep in his chair in the south parlor, in such a position that he could be seen through an entryway by a person passing in the street and glancing in at one of the low windows. Seeing him in this way as he approached the house, Hawthorne was at first startled by his friend's appearance, sitting there motionless in the half-shadow and cross-light. To reassure himself, Hawthorne tapped on the window and waked the sleeper, and then rushing into the house, he exclaimed, "Good Heavens, Horace, I thought you were dead." The connection of this episode with the picture of the dead judge seen through the window sitting in his chair, in the parlor of "The House of the Seven Gables," is evident. This window is thought to have once

served the toll-gatherer of the Marblehead Ferry, which left the foot of Turner street two centuries ago.

The house which stood at the corner of Essex and North streets, known as the "Deliverance Parkman House," a sketch of which may be seen at the Essex Institute, and referred to in Hawthorne's American Notes\* as a house "wherein one of the ancestors of the present occupants used to practice alchemy," is woven into the story of "Peter Goldthwait's Treasure," which first appeared in "The Token" of 1838, and was reprinted in "Twice Told Tales." A still greater interest is attached to this story, however, for it contains the frame-work, so to speak, of the "House of the Seven Gables." Peter Goldthwaite's house was "one of those rusty, moss-grown many-peaked wooden houses which are scattered about the streets of our elder towns, with a beetle-browed second story projecting over the foundation, as if it frowned at the novelty around it." There was an early Peter who made a mysterious fortune, supposed to be hidden somewhere in the house, "one report intimating that the ancient Peter had made the gold by alchemy." To find the treasure Goldthwaite tears out the inside of his house, finding in one room, in a concealed "closet or cupboard on one side of the fireplace, a dusty piece of parchment," telling the amount of the supposed treasure and its hiding place. Finally the treasure chest is found secreted in a closet by the kitchen chimney, but it contains only worthless paper money of the colonial days. The close resemblance of this story to parts of the "Seven Gables," where it is more highly elaborated, is at once apparent, and again shows clearly that Hawthorne evolved the house in that romance from more than one of these old Salem houses, among which the "Deliverance Parkman" house should be included.

There were several many-gabled houses, notably the Philip English house, standing in Hawthorne's day, but all, save the rejuvenated Pickering mansion, have disappeared. The Hunt house at the corner of Washington and Lynde streets, taken down in 1863, was the most picturesque of any which remained long enough

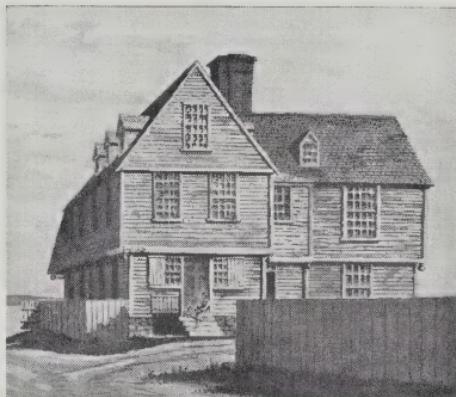
\* Vol. I, p. 201.

to be preserved by photography. Although the visitor must give up the real house, the old elm tree, the shop, Clifford's chamber, the arched window, and the secret closet behind the portrait, and understand that the house in the romance is a composite of all the many-gabled houses then in Salem, with large additions from the author's teeming brain, and had no individual existence out of Hawthorne's fancy, still his life is so closely associated with the Turner-street house that it is fairly entitled to the name.

There are many references in "The House of the Seven Gables" to real places, such as the Post Office, then in the East India Marine building, and the Insurance Office, in the same region, mentioned in the chapter entitled "The Fight of Two Owls."

It was Horace Ingersoll, Miss Susan Ingersoll's adopted son, living in this house, who told Hawthorne the story of the Acadian lovers,\* which, given to Longfellow, appeared in the now classic poem of "Evangeline." This may be added to the other interesting associations connected with the Turner street house. Mr. Ingersoll's name before his adoption was Horace L. Connolly. He died in 1894. An account of his and Hawthorne's connection with the poem of "Evangeline" will be found detailed in the second volume of the *Life of Longfellow*.†

The tales of a "Grandfather's Chair" are said to have drawn their inspiration from this old house also. On one of his visits here, while he was sitting in a dejected state in a deep window seat of the parlor, Hawthorne was complaining that he had written



Philip English House, built about 1863

\* American Note Books, 1839, Vol. I, p. 203.

† Pages 60, 70, 98, 99, and elsewhere.

himself out, and could think of nothing more. Turning to him, and pointing to an old armchair that had long been in the family, Miss Ingersoll said: "Nat, why don't you write about this old chair? There must be many stories connected with it." From this hint the little volume, published in 1841, is said to have come. This chair is now preserved at "The House of the Seven Gables."

The Turner street house was built about 1669 and some years ago, in removing its central chimney there was found an old psalm book and a "Pine-tree" sixpence, now preserved among the relics at the house. In 1909, through the energy and generosity of Miss Caroline O. Emmerton, the house was completely restored in all its old features and made the center of a new and most active philanthropy, a neighborhood settlement. Since then the "Old Bakery," formerly on Washington street, has been moved to the lot and also thoroughly restored. The disfiguring Seamen's "Bethel," until recently in front of the "Seven Gables," has been removed to the rear and altered over for purposes of the settlement, so that as of old the "Seven Gables" now looks out upon the harbor and across to the Marblehead shore. This collection of houses now forms one of the greatest attractions for the visitor to Salem.

**The Custom House** is on Derby Street, opposite Derby wharf. It was built of brick in 1818 and 1819, and is interesting from its association with Nathaniel Hawthorne and Gen. James Miller of "Lundy's Lane" fame. Upon this site formerly stood the home-stead of George Crowninshield, father of Benjamin Crowninshield, member of Congress and Secretary of the Navy; and of Jacob

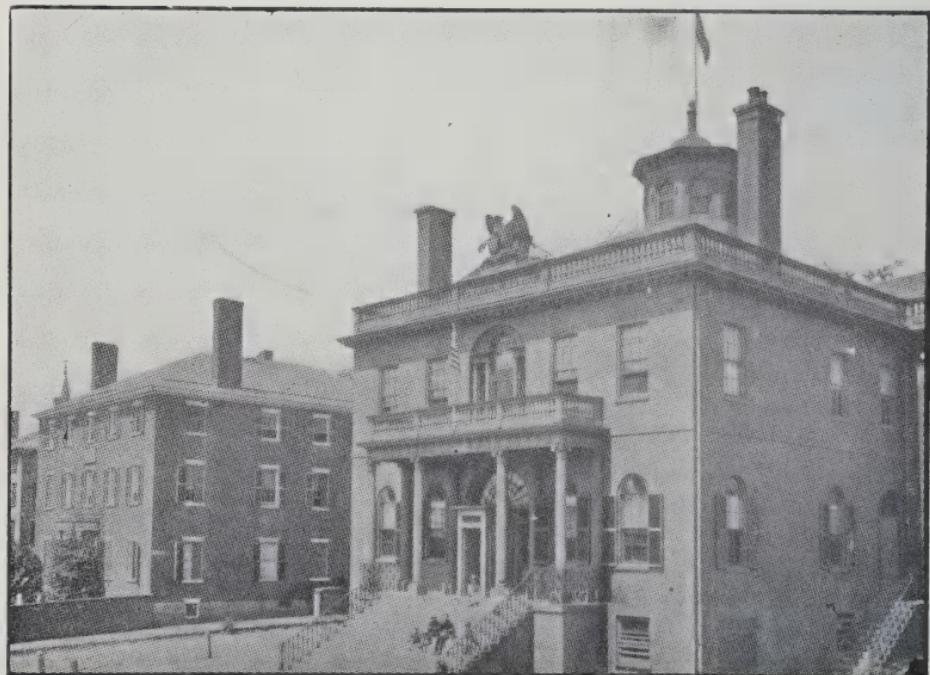


Custom House Desk used by Hawthorne, owned by the Essex Institute now on exhibition at the Salem Custom House.

Crowninshield, member of Congress and who declined the offer of the navy portfolio. The Crowninshield house had pilasters in front and was crowned with a cupola, on the top of which was a vane in the form of a merchant holding at arm's length a spy-glass and scanning the horizon for his returning argosies. A committee of merchants selected the spot in behalf of the government; and Perley Putnam and John Saunders were the contractors. There are pine boards measuring twenty-six inches in width in some of the dados. Slates of rare quality and dimensions were imported from Wales and flagstones for the sidewalks from Potsdam, N. Y. The building contains a portrait in pastel of Joseph Hiller, the first collector under the constitution and a cast of the bust of Abraham Lincoln by Volk. Gen. James Miller, the hero of "Lundy's Lane" was collector here from 1825 to 1849. Hawthorne was appointed surveyor of the port in 1846 and occupied the southwestern front room on the lower floor. The stencil with which he marked inspected goods, "N. Hawthorne" is still shown, as well as the desk at which he wrote. So many of the characters and scenes depicted in the Custom House sketch in the introduction to "The Scarlet Letter" were living realities, it is no wonder that visitors inquire for and confidently expect to be shown the manuscript itself at the Custom House or the Essex Institute. The publication of "The Scarlet Letter" at once produced intense curiosity to see this document of Surveyor Pue and the embroidered "A" so graphically described, and which many readers of the story believed to exist. Just at this time a friend asked Hawthorne if he really had the scarlet letter itself and he assured him that he had. Pressed again to exhibit the relic, Hawthorne said to him, "Well, I did have it; but one Sunday when my wife and I had gone to church, the children got hold of it and put it in the fire." Of course, the manuscript was as fictitious as was Surveyor Pue's connection with the story, his titles only being real, as his gravestone still to be seen in St. Peter's churchyard attests. Hawthorne had a way of using real names of which he fancied the sound, as that of Dr. Swinnerton previously referred to whose gravestone is in the Charter Street

ground; of Judge Pynchon and of Jervase Helwyse, which he found on one of the branches of his own genealogical tree. On the other hand, the existence of a law prescribing the cruel penalties of "The Scarlet Letter" has been generally distrusted.\* Probably most readers have allowed themselves to suppose it a figment of the writer's brain. But when an actual copy of the law in antique print, formerly owned by the Essex Institute, was shown to Barrie, the Scotch romancer, he did not hesitate to pronounce it the most curious thing in Salem. The room in which tradition says the Scarlet Letter was discovered is that in the rear of the collector's private office on the second floor of the easterly side of the building,

\* This penalty was inflicted at Springfield, Mass., as late as October 7, 1754, and the law remained in force until February 17, 1785.



THE OLD LADIES' HOME AND THE CUSTOM HOUSE

and was in Hawthorne's day, and for some years after, an unfinished chamber filled with old papers deposited in boxes and barrels. The old records before the Revolution are missing. They were dispersed or perished in the great fire of October 6, 1774, which consumed the building then used as a custom house. The port of Salem no longer preserves its separate identity nor has its own collector. On July 1, 1913, it was merged with the port of Boston, under a deputy collector, whose office has been transferred to the new Post-office building on Margin street. The Custom House has been taken over by the government in connection with the Derby Wharf project of the National Parks Service.

In the old days, when the word Salem was the synonym for everything brilliant and heroic in a commercial way, the Custom House was a nomadic establishment,—the office went with the Collector from house to house, wherever he might happen to reside, and if he chanced to be a bachelor and a victim of the boarding-house habit, a shipmaster setting out on a voyage could not conjecture where it would be found upon his return. This practice continued until the Revolution. During all these years names now famous were added to the roll of collectors and surveyors. William Fairfax was collector when he left Salem for Virginia to inherit a peerage and to found a family connected with the Washingtons. William Hathorne, the romancer's ancestor, was collecting a tonnage tax in gunpowder in 1667. The names of Browne, Lynde, Bowditch, Veren, Palfray, Hiller and Lee grace the list, and James Cockle, upon whose petition for a warrant to search for smuggled molasses, James Otis made his memorable plea against writs of assistance, was at the time collector of Salem. After 1783 the Custom House was in a building on Central street. In the museum of the Essex Institute may be seen a large wooden eagle, carved by Samuel McIntire, that formerly decorated the entrance of the building at 6 Central street, when it was used as the custom house in 1805.

**The Town Pump.** "A Rill from the Town Pump" was first printed in the "New England Magazine," in 1835, and later in

“Twice Told Tales.” The pump stood by a building on Washington street, just south of Essex, the Town House square of today, but in constructing the railroad tunnel, in 1839, the well which supplied it with water was obliterated, and another pump was set up in Washington street at the passageway between the Daniel



The Town Pump, near the First Meeting House. From a drawing made about 1825

Low store and the Asiatic or Salem Savings Bank building. This, in time, gave place to the present fountain, from which flows Wenham Lake water. So the real pump from which the “rills” ran can only be seen in old pictures, one of which is fortunately preserved at the Institute, and another in the now rare Felt’s Annals.† These pictures show the pump and its surroundings at about the date of the writing of the fantasy. The opening sentence, “Noon by the North clock, noon by the East,” refers to the clocks on the old North and East meeting-houses. The clock on the old

North meeting-house, which then stood at the corner of North and Lynde streets, was carried there from the tower of the old wooden meeting-house of the First Church, built in 1718, when that building was taken down in 1825. The other clock referred to was on the East meeting-house, which stood at the corner of Essex and Bentley streets. Its successor now sounds the hours on the same old bell, cast by Paul Revere, but from the belfry of the Bentley school-house, where it has hung since the removal of the church

† Vol. I, p. 395.

to Washington square. The town pumps of Hawthorne's day were famous affairs. Heavily framed in stone and furnished with wooden troughs, and often built in pairs with a handle projecting at either side, they were seen in various sections of the town, stationed over wells, in suitable locations, where the public could freely help themselves to the pure water they dispensed.

Hawthorne had a curious pride in this early and popular effort. He referred to it in later life, when far away in Rome, and in the introduction to "The Scarlet Letter," written in 1850, he says: "It may be, however,—oh! transporting and triumphant thought,—that the great-grandchildren of the present race may sometimes think kindly of the scribbler of by-gone days, when the antiquary of days to come, among the sites remarkable in the town's history shall point out the locality of THE TOWN PUMP."

**"The Toll Gatherer's Day."** This story was printed in the "Democratic Review."\* The scene is laid at the Essex bridge, or Beverly bridge, as it is usually called, which, running north from Bridge street, Salem, to Cabot street, Beverly, unites the two cities. Near the draw, which was lifted like two huge trapdoors by man-power, was the old seat described by Hawthorne, but neither that nor the toll-house remains. A sketch representing the place in its former condition, may be seen at the Essex Institute. The toll house was a haunt of Hawthorne's in his evening rambles,—he wrote to Longfellow, "Like the owl, I seldom venture abroad till after dusk,"—and there he met the old ship-masters who frequented the place, and listened to their wonderful sea tales.

**"Endecott and the Red Cross."** The scene of this sketch which first appeared in "The Token" of 1838, is laid in Town House Square. The fact of Endecott's action is historic, but the words and scene are, of course, Hawthorne's. The story is, however, suggestive of the spirit of the times, which is well embodied in the poem by Longfellow, entitled "John Endicott," his "New England Tragedies."

\* Of October, 1837, and Salem Observer of November 4, 1837.

**“Main Street.”** First printed in Miss Elizabeth Peabody’s “Aesthetic Papers” in 1849, and later, in connection with “The Snow Image.” Main street, of course, refers to Essex street; but, as the diorama closes with the great snow storm of 1717, no relic of things described, save the Corwin or “Witch” house, at the corner of North and Essex streets, can be visited today.

Many other references could be given to places and scenes described in Hawthorne’s writings. In the “Carrier’s Addresses,” entitled “The Sister Years,” and “Times Portraiture,” written in 1838 for the Gazette, the then new City Hall, the present structure is commented upon; while “I have opened a railroad” refers to the recently established steam communication with Boston, the first built section of the old Eastern Railroad; “the tall steeple of Dr. Emerson’s church” was, of course, that of the South, at the corner of Chestnut and Cambridge streets, destroyed by fire in 1904, where good old parson Emerson retained his connection with the church—a strange thing it would be nowadays—for sixty-seven years. “Dr. Flint’s church” was the old East Church on Essex street, previously mentioned. In fact, the town may be described as Hawthorne’s workshop, from which he turned out, for the delectation of the reading world, his marvellously constructed and finished wares. “Footprints on the Seashore,” printed in the “Democratic Review” in 1838, and later in “Twice Told Tales,” finds its counterpart in the “ramble to the seashore near Phillips’ Beach,” where Hawthorne “crossed the fields near the Brookhouse villa,” as described in the “American Note Books.”\* The story and the notes, read in connection with each other, give an excellent idea of Hawthorne’s method of constructing his art-work, and the ramble is as delightful today as when Hawthorne spent the afternoon there, Oct. 16, 1837. He frequently visited on foot the rocky shores of Beverly, Manchester, Marblehead and Nahant. “Browne’s Folly,” printed in the “Weal Reaf.”† finds its prototype in a walk described in the “American Note books.”‡ The weird detached paragraphs of “Alice Doane’s Appeal” (first printed in

\* Vol. I, p. 94.

† Essex Institute, 1860.

‡ Vol. I, p. 90 (1837).

"The Token," Boston, 1835), are described as being read by the author to "two young ladies . . . on a pleasant afternoon in June," while they all rested on Gallows Hill, overlooking the town. The picture of early Salem there recalled is truthful and interesting, and the closing paragraph is one with which this chapter may well end. Hawthorne here points out the true lesson of the witchcraft delusion of 1692, and the duty of marking the spot where the final acts of that tragedy took place—a duty which still remains to be performed. "Yet, ere we left the hill, we could not but regret that there is nothing on its barren summit, no relic of old, nor lettered stone of later days, to assist the imagination in appealing to the heart. We build the memorial column on the height which our fathers made sacred with their blood, poured out in a holy cause. And here, in dark, funereal stone, should rise another monument, sadly commemorative of the errors of an early race, and not to be cast down, while the human heart has one infirmity that may result in crime."

A handwritten signature in cursive script, appearing to read "Nathaniel Hawthorne".

AUTOGRAPH OF NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE

CUSTOM HOUSE, SALEM,  
COLLECTOR'S OFFICE,

July 18. 1848.

To the Inspectors of the Port:

You are directed to send to the Public

Store, under the Warehouse Bill,

W A  
Y 137 - one bale Cottons  
142 " " " "  
143 " " " "  
151 " " " "  
157 " " " "  
160 " " " "

Imported by Wm Whiteman & Co in the  
Ship John R. M'Noy. Luce  
master, from Liverpool.

John F. Miller, COLLECTOR.  
John B. Buckman, NAVAL OFFICER.  
W. P. Brewster, Purser

## CHAPTER VI

### THE ESSEX INSTITUTE

THE ESSEX INSTITUTE (128-132 Essex street) was organized in 1848, by the union of the Essex Historical Society and the Essex County Natural History Society, and was incorporated the same year. It has for its objects the promotion of history, science and art in Essex County, and is supported by an annual assessment upon its members and by the income from its funds.

**The Essex Historical Society** was incorporated in 1821, having for its object the collection and preservation of material illustrating the civil and natural history of the county of Essex. The

venerable Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, who always took the warmest interest in whatever concerned American literature and science, was its first president. The zeal of its members and their friends in a short time gathered together a valuable collection of portraits and relics illustrative of the early history of the county, and the nucleus of a library



containing files of local newspapers, pamphlets, publications of Essex County authors, etc. These were first housed in Essex place, on Essex street, facing Central; then in a room over the Salem Bank, in Pickman place, where Downing block now stands; and afterwards in Lawrence place at the corner of Washington and Front streets. The society had on its roll of membership the names of many men of wide distinction, such as Timothy Pickering, Ben-



THE ESSEX INSTITUTE

jamin W. Crowninshield, Nathaniel Silsbee, Nathan Dane, Daniel A. White, Joseph Story, Rufus Choate, Leverett Saltonstall, Charles W. Upham, Stephen C. Phillips, Nathaniel Bowditch, Benjamin Pickman, and Joseph B. Felt. Its 50th, 75th and 100th anniversaries were commemorated by the Institute.

**The Essex County Natural History Society** was organized in 1833, largely through the efforts of Dr. Henry Wheatland, "for the purpose of promoting the science of natural history." At first it had a room in the second story of a building in Essex place, opposite Central street. The collection in the spring of 1834 was hardly large enough to fill a single bookcase which had been given to the society. In 1835 it moved into the fourth story of the Franklin building, at the corner of Washington square and Essex street, but this proving an unsuitable place, it again moved, in 1837, to the Masonic Hall on Washington street, where the Holyoke building now stands.

Here its museum occupied a room 15 by 30 feet, adjoining a larger one used for meetings and lectures. The collections could be seen by visitors at the meetings of the society and at the horticultural exhibitions, which were at this time frequent and popular. In 1842 the society moved to the rooms in Pickman Place, 173 Essex street, then vacated by the Essex Historical Society, and formerly occupied by the East India Marine Museum. This building was altered in 1844, when a number of new cases were built and the collection rearranged. A small room on the lower floor served as a laboratory for zoological and anatomical work, and was occupied much of the time by active members of the society. Here several of the best known naturalists of the day began their studies.

**The Essex Institute**, at the time of its formation in 1848, occupied the rooms of the Essex County Natural History Society,



PICKMAN PLACE

at 173 Essex street, removing in 1857 to the newly built Plummer Hall, where its museum was arranged in the lower story. A few years later several of the younger members of the Institute, who had studied zoology with the elder Agassiz, left Cambridge, and devoted their energies largely to the Institute. In consequence of the activity of the Institute at this time in the study of natural history and in collecting material for the formation of a large and valuable zoological and ethnological museum, together with the unexpected opportunity to purchase the East India Marine Hall, with its large collection of ethnological and historical objects, the attention of George Peabody, of London, was called to the desirability of establishing in Salem a county institution which should extend the work already so well begun by the Institute, and at the same time perpetuate the unique museum of the East India Marine Society. This he effected in 1867, by a gift of \$140,000, and the establishment of the Trustees of the Peabody Academy of Science, later simplified to Peabody Museum of Salem. The natural history collections of the Institute were transferred to the care of these trustees, and the objects of the Essex County Natural History Society since then have been carried out by the younger institution, and the special work of the Essex Institute has been more in the way of local history, genealogy and art, along the lines laid down by the founders of the Essex Historical Society. It had been the aim of the Institute to bring together as large a collection as possible illustrating in every way the history and tradition of the county. A museum has thus been formed of historical objects, furniture, household and other utensils, illustrating the home life of the early settlers and those who followed them, Revolutionary and other war reliques, portraits and objects of art, manuscripts and everything which in any way may be considered as belonging to the different periods of the history of Salem and the County of Essex. The Institute long maintained courses of free lectures in Academy Hall, co-operating with the Peabody Museum. During the past decade lectures have been held in the Music room of the Institute and also

at the George L. Ames Memorial hall in the Y. M. C. A. building. Courses in the appreciation of furniture, ceramics, glass, and costumes and also in history have been held at the Institute.

In June, 1887, the Institute moved from Plummer Hall into its new building, 132 Essex street, which was erected for a dwelling-house, in 1851, by John Tucker Daland, a well-known merchant of Salem, and afterwards became the property of his son-in-law, Dr. Benjamin Cox, from whose heirs it was purchased by the Institute, the amount paid being taken from a fund bequeathed by the late William Burley Howes.

In 1906, the Institute purchased from the Salem Atheneum the adjoining Plummer Hall property. A staircase hall was built, giving access to both buildings, and extensive alterations provided a well-lighted picture gallery, a museum hall of fine architectural proportions, a bookstack accomodating 300,000 volumes, and modern conveniences of heating and lighting. The museum hall was opened to the public on September 9, 1907.

**The Historic Site.** About on the site of the museum building formerly Plummer Hall, stood the house of Emmanuel Downing, who married a sister of Governor Winthrop. Their son, George Downing, a graduate of Harvard College, in the first class, settled in London, and gave his name to Downing street, and through a descendant, to Downing College, Cambridge. Capt. Joseph Gardner, the famous Indian fighter,—the “Fighting Joe” of the Nar-



THE READ-PRESCOTT-PEABODY  
HOUSE (1793)

Formerly on site of Essex Institute  
Museum



THE GOVERNOR BRADSTREET HOUSE (1640?)

Formerly on site of Essex Institute Museum

ragansett wars,—married Downing's daughter, and became its life-tenant; and from this threshold he set forth, in 1675, for the "Great Swamp Fight," which proved to be his last. His widow married Governor Bradstreet, who lived and died here. The well from which the Governor's family obtained water was formerly to be seen, covered by a slab, in the basement of what is now the museum building. Here, says Timothy Pickering, the 59th regiment of the line was halted on its way up from Salem Neck to disperse, with bayonet and ball if need be, the town meeting of August 24, 1774, convened at our Town House. This was also the homestead estate of generations of the Bowditch family, and

of Hon. Nathan Read, member of Congress, the last dwelling house upon the site having been built by Mr. Read, who, eighteen years before Fulton's invention of the steamboat, experimented on Danvers River with a large rowboat fitted with paddle-wheels which were turned by hand, John Hancock being one of the passengers. William Hickling Prescott, the historian, author of the "Conquest of Mexico," "Ferdinand and Isabella," and "Philip the Second," was born May 4, 1796, in the eastern chamber of this house, which became, in 1799, the residence of Capt. Joseph Peabody. Upon the decease of his widow, the estate was purchased by the Salem Athenaeum.

### THE LIBRARY

**The Library** of the Essex Institute contains (1952) over 750,000 volumes and pamphlets and is the largest library east of Boston and one of the largest historical and reference libraries in New England. Among special collections are:

**Genealogies**, 3,500 volumes, mainly New England and especially Essex County. Many manuscript genealogies, including the works of Alfred Poor, Perley Derby, Henry Fitz-Gilbert Waters, James Henry Lea and Lothrop Withington; also valuable indices referring to printed sources, including the new American Genealogical index.

**Town Histories**, and works relating to New England history, 4,300, many old and rare volumes.

**Biographies**, 5,000, mainly New England, and a valuable collection of Washingtoniana.

**Historical Society Publications.** A large collection of the publications of 250 societies—historical, genealogical and literary—in all parts of the world, with which the Institute conducts exchanges.

**Public Documents** relating to New England, and also various classifications of government documents of which the Institute is a depository.

**Ward China Library**, 4,500 volumes, in languages other than Chinese, recognized as one of the best collections in the country. Especially strong in periodicals and missions. Established by T. Frank Hunt, a China merchant, and supported by funds given in memory of Gen. Frederick T. Ward of Salem, leader of the "Ever Victorious Army" in the Tai Ping rebellion.

**Art Library**, 3,500 volumes, a well selected collection, including fine arts, ancient and modern, especially nineteenth century publications, architecture, pottery, china, portraiture, costume, silver, engraving, and allied subjects.

**Essex County Collection**, 35,000, books, pamphlets, and miscellaneous items written by Essex County authors, or the product of the Essex County press. Each of the thirty-six towns and cities in the county is well represented in this vast collection, covering the past three hundred years.

**Commercial Marine**, 3,100 volumes relating to every phase of the subject, with 1,850 log books and sea journals, shipmasters' instructions and correspondence, detailing privateering cruises in the two wars with England, and every sort of daring adventure by sea. Customs records of the ports of Salem, Marblehead, Beverly, Newburyport, Ipswich, and Gloucester are on deposit in the fireproof stacks. A collection of price currents from all over the world, probably the largest in this section. A list of entrances and clearances of Boston and all Essex County ports, from 1686 to 1765, including valuable data relating to vessels and cargoes, as copied from the Public Record Office, London.

**Broadsides**, 5,100 items, many rare and valuable, dating from the early settlement of the country, concerning Revolutionary War, old songs and ballads, politics, carriers' addresses, temperance, religion, military, civil, shipping, commissions, and many others.

**Bookplates**, 4,000, including the Brooks collection of American and foreign bookplates, catalogued and arranged.

**Manuscripts**, 2,800 volumes and 650 boxes of family papers, covering all sections of the county, showing in detail the life and times of the people of Essex County during the past three centuries; collection of more than 2,200 account books, mainly of Essex County business, dating from 1651 through the 19th century; deeds and wills, with valuable signatures; autograph collection; manuscript school books.

**Business History.** As a business historical library it is almost unsurpassed. It covers not only marine affairs but also insurance, banking, manufacturing and ship building of the 17th and 18th centuries.

**Whittier and Hawthorne.** Outstanding collections of the first editions of their works, with letters and broadsides relating to these distinguished authors. An unsurpassed collection of material relating to Whittier, including the Oak Knoll collection of manuscripts and letters.

**Other Literary Personages.** Lucy Larcom, Gail Hamilton, Harriet Prescott Spofford, William Winter, George E. Woodbury, James Parton, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps, Harriet Beecher Stowe, Jones Very, and others are represented by their works and letters, and by the nineteenth century periodicals to which they contributed.

**Miscellaneous.** A large collection of *Juveniles*, many rare and unusual; *Maps and Plans*, Essex County and outside; 611 volumes on *Numismatics*, including the Robinson collection; 3,900 *Directories*, mainly New England; 400 *Bibles*; 3,000 *Almanacs*; 4,400 books on *Caricature*; books on *Cookery*, *Shorthand*, *Religion*, *Agriculture*, *Civil War* and *Slavery*, and *Sociology*.

**Newspapers**, 5,100 volumes, Essex County and Boston mainly, although there are many Philadelphia, New York and Washington. These date from the Boston News-Letter, 1704, through the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, with complete files of the Salem Gazette, Salem Register, Salem Observer, and the Commercial Ad-

vertiser, the last named, having a Hawthorne connection, is unique in this country.

**English Records.** Printed visitations and parish registers, wills, act books, chancery proceedings. The Waters-Withington-Lea abstracts of English records, including wills and parish registers, constituting the only large manuscript collection of abstracts from English genealogical records to be found in America. Also an alphabetical manuscript index of Chancery depositions, covering the earliest emigration to this country.

## PUBLICATIONS

The publications of the Essex Institute are the Historical Collections, issued quarterly, and now (1952) in the eighty-eighth volume; now being thoroughly indexed to make them more useful. Other publications are the Bulletin, containing scientific matter, 30 volumes; the Proceedings, 6 volumes; Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, 8 volumes, a unique and valuable collection dating from 1636; Probate Records of Essex County, 3 volumes, from 1635; Ship Registers of Salem, 1789-1900, Marblehead, 1789-1850, Newburyport, 1789-1870 and Gloucester, 1789-1875; Salem Imprints, 1768-1825; Salem Town Records, 1636-1691, 3 volumes; Salem Vessels and Their Voyages, 4 volumes; Sketch of Salem; History of the Boston & Maine, Eastern and Lowell Railroads; Artists and Craftsmen of Essex County; Immigrants to New England, 1700-1775; Early Coastwise and Foreign Shipping of Salem, 1750-1769; Catalogue of Portraits in Essex Institute, covering three centuries and the Additions to the Portraits (from 1936-1950); The Physicians of Essex County (Mass.) (1626-1840); St. Peter's Church in Salem Before the Revolution; History of Newburyport Newspapers; History of Maritime Connecticut During the Revolution; Trades and Tradesmen of Essex County; Diary of Rev. William Bentley, 1784-1819, 4 volumes; Holyoke Diaries, 1709-1856; Vital Records of Massachusetts



PARLOR OF ABOUT THE YEAR 1800 IN ESSEX INSTITUTE MUSEUM

Towns, 50 volumes; and more than 400 other books and pamphlets relating to marine, numismatics, science, genealogy and history. (Printed catalogue of publications on application.)

#### MEMBERSHIP

The Essex Institute is supported by an annual assessment from each of its members, the income from its funds, and by voluntary contributions from its friends. There are three classes of members, paying annual dues as follows: Active, \$3; contributing, \$5; sustaining, \$10. Life membership is \$75. It is controlled by a council elected by the society. The officers are: Stephen Willard Phillips, president; Chester F. Voorhees, treasurer; Harriet Silvester Tapley, librarian and editor and Esther Usher, assistant librarian and assistant editor.



MRS. TIMOTHY FITCH  
By Blackburn



MRS. CHARLOTTE FORRESTER  
By Stuart



ALEXANDER HAMILTON  
By Trumbull



DR. HENRY WHEATLAND  
By Vinton

## THE MUSEUM

The Museum of the Institute is open to visitors daily (with the exception of Sundays and holidays) from 9 a.m. to 4:45 p.m. from April 1 to November 1 and from 9 a.m. to 4:15 p.m. from November 1 to April 1. Visitors may obtain of the attendant an itinerary giving special features of the Institute.

**Picture Gallery.** The picture gallery, hallways, and adjoining rooms, contain more than 400 paintings, principally portraits. They are largely of the men and women who made the history of Salem and of Essex County from the middle of the 17th to the end of the 19th centuries. A large proportion of the leaders of the community are represented: Endecott and Leverett, Sir William Pepperrell, Col. Timothy Pickering, Gen. Israel Putnam, Rev. William Bentley of the famous Diary, Nathaniel Hawthorne, Gen. Frederick Townsend Ward, and others of a later period. Most of the portraits and miniatures were painted in New England, but there are some which came from other lands. There are early portraits by unknown men, then portraits by Badger, Greenwood, Smibert, and Blackburn in the middle third of the 18th century, then Copley, then Benjamin Blythe, a Salem-born worker in pastel; then Trumbull and Stuart. Harding follows Stuart. James Frothingham and Charles Osgood and the Salem artists, Frank W. Benson and Philip Little. The collection is one of no small importance in the chronology of New England art. More detailed information is available in the volume, "Portraits in the Essex Institute" and also the "Additions to the Catalog of Portraits in the Essex Institute," published in 1949. Among the outstanding portraits is Smibert's Sir William Pepperrell, an heroic life-size canvas of the hero of Louisburg.



**Furniture.** The furniture in the museum is largely the earliest in date the Institute possesses, and includes a turned settle covered with "Turkey work," an oak wainscot chair, one of a set of four belonging to the Farley family of Ipswich, brought to this country in 1635 by the first immigrants of the Dennis family, presented in 1821 to the Essex Historical Society to be used by Dr. E. A. Holyoke, the president; the George Rea Curwen collection of desks, oak chests, 1675-1700 chairs, etc.: the cradle of

Judge Story and of his son, William Wetmore Story, the sculptor and poet; a court cupboard, owned by John Putnam; a gateleg table and chest from the Henry Fitz-Gilbert Waters collection; a table upon which Moll Pitcher told fortunes during the Revolution; chair and desk owned by Nathaniel Bowditch; and stand for christening basin in use in First Church, Salem, in 1691. Other examples of 17th, 18th and 19th century furniture are shown in their proper settings in the various houses owned by the Institute, particularly the Salem-made Sheraton and Hepplewhite pieces and sets of chairs in the Peirce-Nichols (1782) and Pingree houses (1804).

**Cases and Collections.** A tour of the museum by cases and collections reveals the following:

*Jewelry, Mourning Rings, Seals, Bead Work.* A large collection of jewelry, including the seal ring of Gov. John



Bowditch  
Desk and  
Quadrant.

Leverett (1616-1679), of a semi-precious nature, some from Colonial times but largely of the Victorian age—showing handsome coral, seed-pearl, and cameo sets; mourning rings—a large number of the seventeenth and eighteenth century funeral rings worn in memory of the deceased, usually engraved with the date of death and initials of the name; a case containing seals—the original design made by George Peabody for the seal of the city of Salem, seals of local corporations, and the royal seal of Great Britain; bags, purses, belts in bead work from 1825-1850.

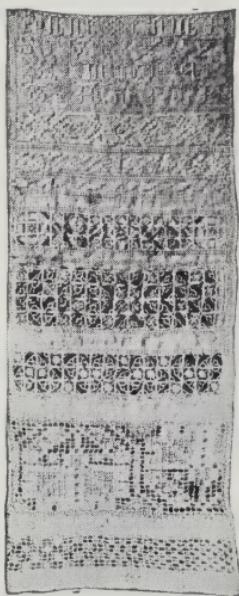
*Napoleonic Relics*, including a coffee cup used by him during the retreat from Moscow, and a shirt taken from his wardrobe abandoned at that time, also a tassel from his death bed.

*Ivory Portraits of East India Princes*, spoils from the Sepoy rebellion.

*Samplers and Specimens of Fine Needle-Work*, including a tester brought from England in 1640 by Madame Sylvester Eveleth, and a sampler wrought by Anne Gower, wife of Gov. John Endecott, before 1628, oldest sampler in the country, and one, the third oldest, made by Mary Holingworth, who married Philip English, 1675.

*Writing Materials, Spectacles and Eye-Glasses, Fans.* A comprehensive collection of sand-boxes, hand stamps, inkwells, etc.; spectacle cases, pewter-bowed glasses, etc., from 1750 on; French, English and Chinese fans—others of sandalwood and tortoise shell. Also a collection of French and Spanish fans once owned by Mrs. Marshall Field and the gift of Mrs. Albert J. Beveridge.

*Card Cases and Patch Boxes.* Patch boxes of Billston enamel, about 1750, and Battersea enamel.



Anne Gower Endecott  
Sampler  
Before 1628

*The William P. McMullan Collection.* Indian, Persian and Oriental relics.

*Personal Relics of Gen. Frederick T. Ward* (Taiping Rebellion). Chinese court boots and Mandarin hat with red button of the first rank, worn by General Ward, also shoes, jewelry, and other personal effects of Changmei, his wife.

*Miniatures, Silhouettes, Bas-relief in Wax.* A collection of about seventy-five miniatures, including some by Verstille and wax portraits by Rauschner. For further reference, see the catalogue, "Portraits in the Essex Institute," and the "Additions."

*Carved Ivory and Shell Combs.* Beautiful ivory Chinese fans (1810-1850) and tortoise-shell combs, carved and plain.

*Laces.* A large variety, including Limerick, Battenburg, English, Honiton, a Flemish lace appearing in the portrait of George Corwin painted in 1675.

*Coin Collection.* A large collection of coins and medals, both ancient and modern, including the Robinson collection of Oriental coins and the Lee collection of American coins, very complete in Colonial and United States coins, also a rare and unusual collection of Colonial scrip.

*Buckles, Watches, Snuff Boxes, Witchcraft Documents.* A number of knee and shoe buckles from 1690 on; a large collection of about sixty watches, some English from 1736; also French and Swiss; snuff boxes decorated in various ways and of all shapes; Witchcraft depositions of Ann Putnam, and a deed signed by Bridget Bishop, who was hanged for witchcraft. Indictment against Abigail Hobbs. Examination of Martha Cory, who was hanged as a witch in 1692.

*Historical Objects.* Gov. John Endecott's sundial; padlock and key weighing two grains, made in Russia; cherry stone containing 113 miniature silver spoons; tea from the Boston tea party; Wordsworth's inkstand; paper weight used by Dickens; and numerous Hawthorne relics.

*Silver.* Loving cup (Swan, 1749); spoon (Hull), one of the earliest known Colonial spoons; spoons, (Revere, father and son);

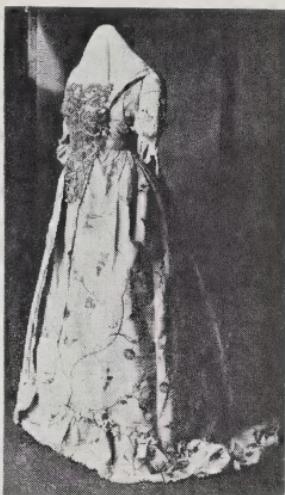
porringers by Burt, Winslow and Lang; patch boxes, spoons, etc., by Hanners, Edwards, Lang, Hiller, Brookhouse, Jones, and four generations of the famous Moultons of Newburyport. The church silver is unique. Among the pewter is the famous Herrick covered porringer with double handles.

*Type Rooms.* Three rooms—a kitchen of 1750, with brick fireplace and oven, dresser, corner cupboard, settle, sanded floor, etc., a bedroom of 1800, with full-dressed bed, trundle bed, high chest of drawers, Franklin stove, painted floor, etc.; and a parlor of 1800, with spinet, carved mantel, and fine mahogany furniture. The The Essex Institute invented the idea of "period rooms."

*The Hammond Collection of Clocks and Watches* of American and foreign make, from very early types to modern clocks.

*Dolls and Toys.* Aside from the Vaughan doll and toy collection there are also many other types of toys, including Noah's Arks, trains, barns, stables, a Napoleonic coach, a Tilbury cart, games, toy models and vehicles; early wooden dolls, rag dolls, to 20th century dolls; doll's beds, bureaus, and chairs, a highboy made in Salem in the late 18th century, a cradle made by one of the British prisoners of the war of 1812; a Noah's ark, one of the finest, belonging to a lady born in 1795; a toy horse, hand-carved; a toy phaeton, made before 1800; and a model barouche of 1822; old Nankin and Staffordshire transfer ware in doll's china sets, and doll house owned by Annie C. Warren, 1856.

*Weapons and War Relics.* Cap of Hessian soldier, Revolutionary period; collection of Revolutionary relics—hats, uniforms, muskets, swords, powder horns, bullets, etc.; saddle bag used at Bunker Hill;



Silver lace brocade dress  
Worn about 1765



Hessian Cap. 1776

full uniform of a General in the War of 1812; uniforms of local military organizations, 1789-1920; wooden torpedo from harbor of Charleston, S. C., (Civil War); wheel used in Salem at the time of the draft, 1863; collection of relics of the Civil War—muskets, swords, pistols, dirks, knapsacks, canteens, drums, bullets, shot and shell, etc. Emilio collection of military buttons, one of the most complete in the country.

*Musical Instruments.* Many early makes from prominent homes including the piano on which Lowell Mason composed the music

for "Nearer My God To Thee," the first house organ produced by Mason & Hamlin and the first organ built by George Hook (later of Hook & Hastings) at the age of 21 in 1827. This organ has been electrified. There is also a spinet by Benjamin Blyth of Salem.

*Shawls.* A display of Cashmere and Paisley shawls.

*Textiles and Accessories.* 14 frames containing busks, braces, French garters, stockings before 1800, mits and gloves, baby clothes, baptismal robe (1745), feather flowers, scarfs, brocades (1776), handwoven coverlets (1800), cotton cloth (1806), "India copperplate" cotton (1755), patch, patch handkerchiefs (1810), and other early textiles.

*Pineapple Doorway and Stairway.* Capt. Thomas Poynton's house, Pineapple door (1740) and stairway from house built about 1772 on 48-50 Charter street, Salem. Music balcony from Washington Hall, 1792, and arch from the Pickman house. Wood carvings by Samuel McIntire, including a sculptured eagle formerly over the old Custom House door, 1805; and profile bas-relief of Washington once adorning the gateway to the Salem Common, 1805.

*China, Pottery and Glass.* Examples of old English and American ware, Canton, decorated and undecorated, Delft, English, and Oriental Lowestoft, Sevres, and many examples of European and Oriental ware. Liverpool pitchers, ginger jars of different periods, collection of old glass, wine glasses (1700-1800), Stiegel glass, old pressed bottles and glasses, Sandwich cup plates, Bennington ware, Danvers pottery, Pennsylvania Dutch slip-glaze and stone ware.

*Pewter.* Old pewter, English and American dishes, cups, mugs, plates, spoons, and spoon molds.

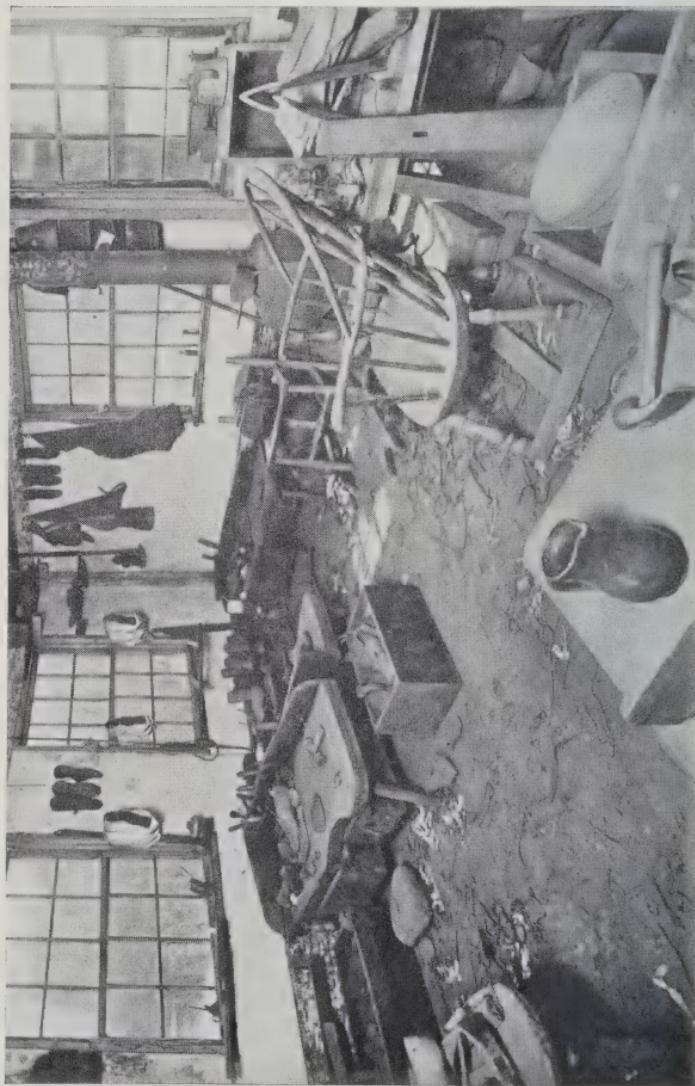
*Rogers Groups.* One of the most complete collections of the statuette groups, so popular during the 19th century, modelled by John Rogers, who was born in Salem in 1829. Here will be found examples of 82 of the 88 made by Rogers.

*Historic Scenes, Miniature Groups.* "Meeting of Governor Winthrop and Governor Endecott," 1630; "Leslie's Retreat," 1775; "Launching of the Essex," 1799.

*Lamps and Lighting Fixtures.* Collection of candlesticks, tinder boxes, old metal and glass lamps of different periods; lanterns, candle molds, card matches, Lucifer, whale-oil lamps, camphene lamps, Rumford lamps, Betty lamps, lamp picks, petticoat lamp and early gas and electric fixtures and bulbs. The Howe collection of lamps and lighting devices gathered by the late Dr. Oliver H. Howe of Cohasset, and the gift of his sons, is a recent addition.

*Costumes.* Students of fashion and design find much of interest in this collection of over 400 dresses dating from the 17th century. One of the most outstanding is a dress worn at one of Queen Victoria's levees and at the wedding of the Duke and Duchess of York (later King George V and Queen Mary). The collection compares favorably with the collection of the "wives of the presidents" at the Smithsonian Institution. There is also a fine collection of accessories, stockings, hats, gloves, parasols, beaded bags, umbrellas, etc.

**Out-of-Doors Museum** In the garden in the rear of the Institute (*entrance at the right of the main staircase*) is the John

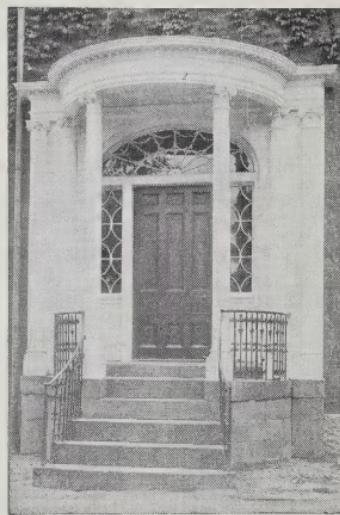


THE INTERIOR OF THE LYB-TAPLEY SHOE SHOP  
IN ESSEX INSTITUTE GARDEN

Ward house—a seventeenth century house (built in 1684) with overhanging second story and peaked windows in the roof. The rooms on the first floor are furnished in the manner of that period; and an “apothecary shop” (1830), a weave room, and a Salem “cent shop” of the early 19th century are in the lean-to. Beside the house is a garden of old-time flowers, an early well-sweep, and a small shoemaker’s shop supplied with the equipment of about 1830.

The visitor will also find the first Quaker meeting house built in Salem in 1688 by Thomas Maule and now transformed into the Vaughan Doll and Toy House, also, in the garden is the Gideon Tucker porch (1806) designed by Samuel McIntire; the porch from “Dr. Grimshawe House,” *see page 63*: the cupola from the Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse mansion (about 1790) containing a Corné fresco; a mile-stone (1711).

*An Annex Building* in the rear of the museum contains fire apparatus, sewing machines, vehicles, stoves, farm, house and mechanics’ tools and utensils, house hardware, the Pickering house fireback (1660), baskets, musical instruments, household art of the Victorian period, as well as the original cast of William Wetmore Story’s “Saul,” and Edison phonograph; an early Clementi grand piano; a Broadwood piano of 1791; a spinet made by Samuel Blythe, of Salem, in 1789, supposed to be the earliest made in the country. A one-horse chaise, about 1785. Wagon used by Mrs. Spencer, who made Salem Gibraltar candy, about 1825. Carved wooden cigar-store Indians.



GIDEON TUCKER PORCH  
(1806)

In Essex Institute Garden

*Tools, Implements, etc.*

Collection of household utensils,—cranes, including one from the room in which Hawthorne was born; fire backs, fire dogs, Dutch ovens, Yankee bakers, Franklin stoves, Rumford oven, Liverpool roaster, tobacco tongs, foot stoves, toasting racks, warming pans, coffee roasters, samp mortar made from the trunk of an apple tree, roasting jacks, candle moulds, tin lanterns, spoons, tin and wooden ware, etc.; winnowing basket, about 1690; a large collection of Indian and New England baskets; hand millstone or querñ, brought from England in 1630, by Lieut. Francis Peabody; wooden plough used by a Boxford Minute Man on the morning of April 19th, 1775; lace frame, in use in Ipswich previous to 1790; Ramage printing press (ca. 1805); a collection of razors; large collection of fire buckets; the Union hand-tub, 1749, the first fire-engine in Salem; models of the William Penn and Lafayette old-type hose carriages; spinning wheels for wool and flax, clock reel, tape looms, and quilting frames; a hand loom, with rag carpet in progress of weaving; wooden churns, tools, and agricultural implements, and collections of tools used in the various trades,—by the carpenter, blacksmith, shoemaker, currier, cooper.

*Vaughan Doll and Toy House*, in the Garden, a gift from Mrs. Henry Goodwin Vaughan of South Berwick, Me., is well furnished with outstanding doll furniture and toys, over 500 in number. This was Mrs. Vaughan's collection of many years. Open daily 9-4:45. No charge.



Pickering Fire Back



VAUGHAN DOLL AND TOY HOUSE

## THE PINGREE HOUSE

**The Pingree House** (128 Essex street) is owned and furnished by the Essex Institute; it was designed and built by Samuel McIntire in 1804 for Capt. John Gardner, and was occupied for almost a century by Hon. David Pingree and his son, David, who was born in the house and died there. David, Jr., was senior vice-president of the Essex Institute and his heirs conveyed the house to the Institute. With furniture from the Institute collections, the Pingree House is now one of the outstanding mansions on view in Salem.

The house is a three-story brick mansion with an L in the rear. Each floor level is marked by a broad band of white marble, and the top crowned by a balustrade. The floor plan is cleverly arranged by McIntire and practically identical on each floor, having four rooms, each with a fireplace.

A visit to the house shows, as one enters, the spacious hall opening through to the rear and with a stairway mounting to the third story. The mahogany rail, with banisters in white pine of Chippendale pattern, is a restoration from black walnut, which, at some unknown date, replaced the mahogany. The house is furnished throughout as though it were lived in and occupied by successive generations, each contributing a few pieces; but an attempt has been made not to overrun the first quarter of the 19th century. A great deal of the furniture and a good many of the paintings are of Salem origin; other accessories are characteristic of the town during the Colonial and Federal periods and are arranged to recreate a correct harmonious gentleman's house during the period of Salem's shipping days.

On the ground floor are many fine sets of Hepplewhite and Sheraton chairs of Salem craftsmanship; notably in the dining room with its simple tinted walls of tourquoise blue, where McIntire's rather chaste Adam feeling in the woodwork is enhanced by



THE PINGREE HOUSE

fine Blackburn portraits and silver. In the china closet are services of Canton, Nankin, and Oriental Lowestoft, brought back to Salem families by skippers in the China trade. Other pieces of furniture of interest in the dining room are a sideboard attributed to McIntire, a New England secretary of 1790, and a marble-topped Sheraton serving-table. In the spacious front hall are exhibited two of the six known existing Cooper portraits.

The double parlors on the side opposite the dining room have two of McIntire's most ornate mantels, and the double door-head is decorated with characteristic work. Here are more Hepplewhite chairs, and a Salem secretary of 1809, an enormous girandole, a Sheraton sofa, a "lolling" chair, Chippendale arm-chair,

and block-front secretary of an earlier period, and a sofa for which Samuel McIntire did the carving.

The panels of the paper appearing on the walls of these rooms were found at the Essex Institute and were designed in France by Fragonard Fils in 1808. Each panel represents a different month of the year, the name of the month appearing at the bottom of each panel in a medallion, the panels being gold color with the figures painted thereon a deep blue. The rugs are both Aubusson and the first piano in Topsfield appears in one corner of the front parlor, this manufactured by Benjamin Crehore. The curtains are fine embroidered India mull.

In the downstairs hall, a mahogany tall clock, the product of David Wood of Newburyport, ticking off the hours as it has done for a hundred and fifty years, stands under the stairway leading to the second floor, where three bedrooms are shown. The Crown-inshield Memorial bedroom has a most delicate McIntire mantel and is very elegant in apricot and Directoire blue draperies and bed hangings. Again are a set of Sheraton chairs, a Hepplewhite secretary of 1807 and an interesting little French writing desk that belonged to Madam De Stael. In the rear bedroom, a little more severe and simple room, is a Field Bed, walnut Queen Anne highboy of 1764 and serpentine front chest of drawers, a pair of Salem Chippendale side chairs and a handsome fireside wing chair covered with old printed cotton of about 1800. On the opposite side of the hall there is another beautiful bedroom done in robin's egg blue, the bed hangings and window draperies of this color embroidered with small red roses. This is the Francis Shaw memorial room. The curtains are of imported French voile and are most unusual with cord and large tassels at the sides. The furnishings in this room consist of French Chippendale styles with a Chinese influence; the dressing table being originally in the Elias Hasket Derby house.

Climbing the stairs to the third floor, which is lower studded and rather devoid of carved woodwork, is a children's room filled

with toys, models, and miniature sets, to delight the heart of a child of any period.

Across the hall is the Boy's Room with the usual games, knick-knacks, etc. The walls are covered with a most unique French scenic wall paper representing "Banks of the Rhine" and "Venetian scenes." This paper was taken from two different houses, the Lafayette-Gregory house in Marblehead and the old Wheelwright house in Newburyport. The draperies in this room are quaint and are made of *toile de Joue* after a design by Thomas Jefferson. The rug was presented to Capt. William McMullan while he was consul at Zanzibar by the Shah of Persia.

## THE PEIRCE-NICHOLS HOUSE

**The Peirce-Nichols House**, 80 Federal street, is owned by the Essex Institute; it was built for Jerathmeel Peirce in 1782 and completed in 1801. It was designed by Samuel McIntire and considered to be the finest wooden house in New England. It was occupied by George Johonnot from 1827 to 1839, when it was willed back to the Nichols family; the Essex Institute purchased it in 1917.

Along the street runs a delicate white fence with urn-topped gate posts (1801), while the house itself is a three-story square white clapboard mansion, deep and broad, with a fore-shortened third story. It is topped by a classic balustrade around a low roof, and on the corners are severe fluted pilasters. On the rear of the house is a one-story addition with a series of broad doors under elliptical fanlights. On the opposite side of this paved courtyard and across one end of the yard is a stable, with its heavy arches of the Colonial period, and various outbuildings of the later period, through which leads steps into the garden. The path formerly led to the wharf and warehouse on the North River, and now runs through sloping terraced and formal gardens, with box-bordered paths and fruit trees and flowers. On the development of the grounds, as well as on the building of the house, the wealthy East India merchant, Peirce, lavished his personal attention.

The house is entered by a Doric entrance porch in front, and on the west side by an enclosed porch. Each floor has four rooms, all on the corners, and a side hall running up the west side in addition to the main hall. The house seems to have been completed room by room; the west side finished earliest, in 1782, in the Georgian manner, while the east side in McIntire's late manner (1801) is in the Adam style. Throughout the interior is evidence of McIntire's hand as a designer and woodcarver.—the splendid woodwork and the magnificent mantel and chimney-pieces.

Upon entering the hall, the stairway commands attention, with



THE PEIRCE-NICHOLS HOUSE



PAVED COURTYARD IN REAR OF PEIRCE-NICHOLS HOUSE

its unusual balustrade, showing a Chippendale influence. There is a Palladian window on the landing, three steps below the top of the stairway. The room on the west side of the first floor is smaller than the east parlor and done in the earlier style; it has a beautiful brass hob-grate in soap-stone. The dining-room is in the rear of this room, separated by the side hall and a closet. The east side Adam parlor, done 19 years later, is longer and larger than the west room and shows McIntire's finest craftsmanship. Its plain surfaces and delicate ornament bespeak the Adam manner and its refinement. The chimney-piece is almost the finest in Salem; on it is a beautiful mirror of the period, and in the window-niches carved seats designed specially to fit them. On the floors above, the bedrooms correspond more or less in plan and in decoration to the rooms below, those in the earlier western portion being Georgian and Colonial, and in the later eastern portion, Adam or Federal. The east front "guest" chamber is large, and its rear wall is treated architecturally with a recessed chimney-piece—a simplified edition of the one below in the parlor. Throughout the house the architecture of Salem's shipping days offers all who come a reminder of the days when finishes, moldings and decorations were made by hand, and the grace and spaciousness of the houses now call forth our profound admiration.

## THE JOHN WARD HOUSE

**The John Ward House**, in the Essex Institute garden, was built in 1684; it stood on the east side of St. Peter street, on land now within the Jail enclosure, and when this land was needed for jail purposes, the house was moved to its present location in the garden of the Essex Institute. At first the entire house consisted of one room on the south side of the chimney, the stairway ascending around the chimney; later on, more room was needed, and a second fireplace was built back to the first, and two more rooms and an attic like the first two, though slightly smaller, were added. Still more room being desired in the course of time, a lean-to was built along the entire back of the house. Probably at first the inside walls were open to the exterior sheathing, but before long the spaces were filled in with stones or bricks; eventually hand-riven laths were applied over the whole and roughly plastered. The floor was of earth, there being no cellar. The windows are of casement style, opening outward, and have leaded diamond panes. The front door was not supplied with a lock but was held by a heavy bar. Later improvements brought the laying of a wooden floor.

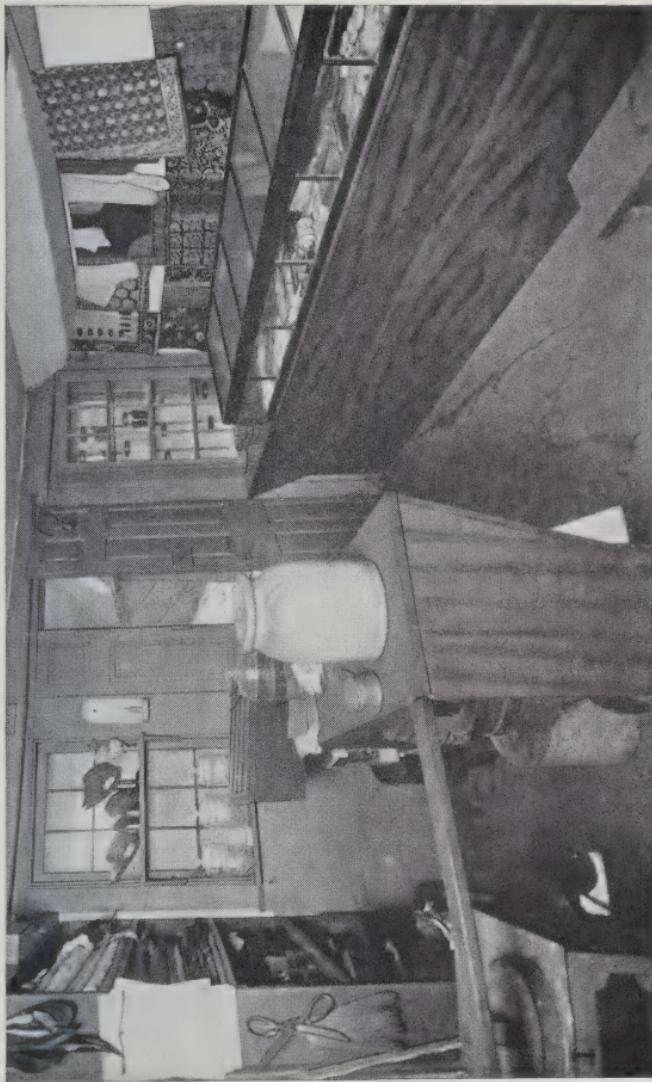
The parlor or "great room" has wide floor boards and fine pine sheathing. The two spinning-wheels are for flax; there is a ladder-back chair of the 17th century, a cradle, a rare candlestand, a Bible-



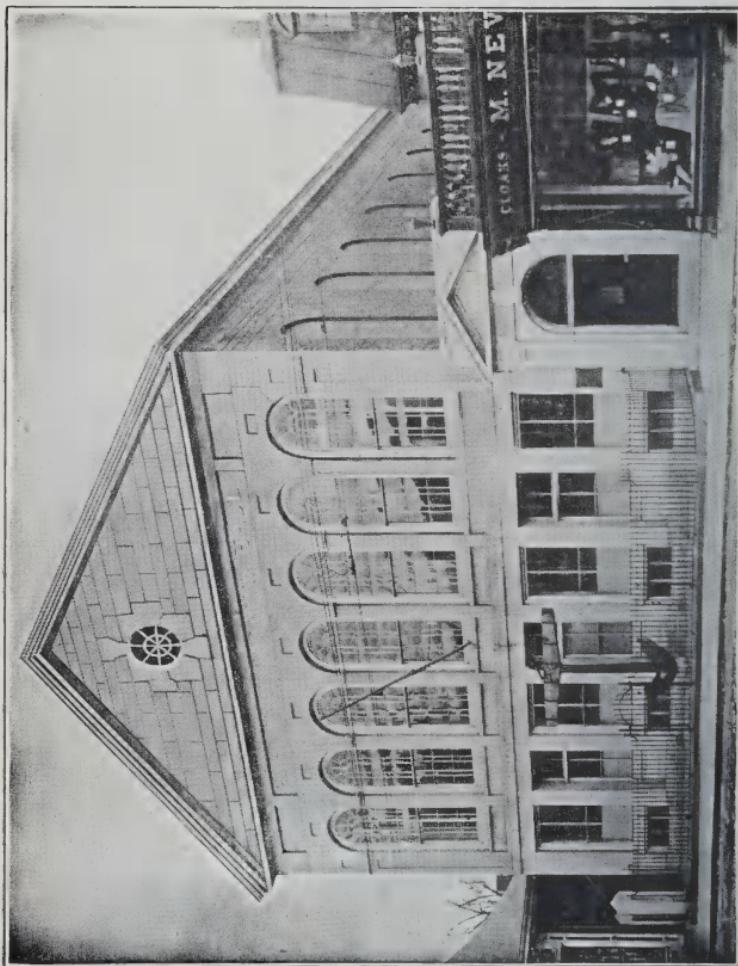
JOHN WARD HOUSE  
Built 1684. In Essex Institute Garden

box, two chest of drawers, a court cupboard and a copy of Smibert's *Judge Samuel Sewall*. Passing into the kitchen, we find against one wall a pine dresser with pewter platters, wooden trenchers and pottery mugs, and alongside the fireplace another collection of pewter. The table is set and shows a homespun cloth, wooden salt-cellars, wooden plates, horn-handled knives and pewter spoons. Ranged along the wall are sundry utensils, wooden piggins and noggins, and a huge wooden mixing bowl, bread trough, and skewer rack, a churn, a basket for cheese-straining, a meal-bin, and various baskets. Filling most of the opposite wall is the great fireplace, with its huge beam across the opening, and in the inglenook a recess in the brickwork to hold a candlestick and the door of the brick oven. Before the fire stands the spit; over it hangs a great brass pot; by the side a chafing-dish and fire-pan.

In the lean-to is an apothecary shop of about 1830, with its jars and bottles of drugs, its file of prescriptions, its scales and demijohns and cabinets of drawers. Between this shop and the "Cent Shop" is a small room in which are an assortment of tools of the weaver's trade. The Cent Shop contains two small counters with old showcases and has a glass-sashed door to one of the windows with display shelves. In these cases are jars of penny candy, a variety of toys, and notions. On the shelves are bolts of dry goods and other merchandise.



"CENT-SHOP" OF THE EARLY NINETEENTH CENTURY  
IN THE WARD HOUSE



PEABODY MUSEUM: EAST INDIA MARINE HALL

## CHAPTER VII

### THE PEABODY MUSEUM

The Peabody Museum of Salem owes its name to George Peabody\* of London, who in 1867 gave funds by which the museum of the East India Marine Society, founded in 1799, and the natural history collections of the Essex Institute were combined in an institution for the "promotion of Science and Useful Knowledge in the County of Essex," to be administered by a self-perpetuating board of private trustees.

The Salem East India Marine Society was an unique institution, its membership being restricted to "any persons who shall have navigated the seas near the Cape of Good Hope or Cape Horn, either as Masters or Commanders or (being of the age of twenty-one years) as Factors or Supercargoes of any vessels belonging to Salem." The objects of the organization were: "First, to assist the widows and children of deceased members who may need it; Second, to collect such facts and observations as tend to the improvement and security of navigation, and, Third, to form a Museum of natural and artificial curiosities, particularly such as are to be found beyond the Cape of Good Hope and Cape Horn." The first gift to the museum was from Capt. Jonathan Carnes, a number of objects from Sumatra, several of which are still preserved and treasured as the nucleus of the Peabody Museum.

The East India Marine Society at first occupied rooms on the third floor of the Stearns building, which formerly stood at the northeast corner of Washington and Essex streets, but, in 1804, the Society moved to rooms expressly fitted for the purpose in the then new Pickman building, which occupied the present site of the Downing block, 173 Essex street. It is an interesting fact that these rooms were later the home, successively, of the Athene-

\* George Peabody was born in South Danvers—named Peabody in his honor in 1858—18 February 1795. He died in London, 4 November 1869, and was buried in Harmony Grove Cemetery in Salem in February, 1870. The institution was originally incorporated as "Peabody Academy of Science," a misleading name, changed by act of legislature in 1915 to the "Peabody Museum of Salem."



EAST INDIA MARINE HALL

næum, the Historical and Natural History societies, and the Essex Institute. Between the years 1804 and 1820, the collections rapidly increased, the museum became crowded and, in 1824, East India Marine Hall was erected. The lower floor was occupied by the Asiatic Bank, the Oriental Insurance Office, and the U. S. Post Office, while the large hall above, one hundred feet long and fifty feet wide, was devoted to the museum and the social meetings of the organization. The dedication, a great event at the time, took place 14 October 1825, John Quincy Adams, then President of the United States, delivering the opening address.

During the years which followed, accessions to the ethnological department of the museum, from China, India, the Pacific Islands, Africa and South America, were numerous and valuable, while at the meetings of the society there came together, socially, the travelled merchants and ship-masters of Salem. Elaborate dinners were served on the great crescent-shaped table which formerly occupied the center of the hall, and many distinguished guests were entertained.

As early as 1821 the society printed a catalogue of its museum which, even then, was arranged as a scientific collection. During its entire existence, no admission fee has ever been charged visitors to the Museum. At first, members' cards admitted to the hall, which was kept open during the warmer months, and since the Museum has been in the hands of the Peabody Trustees its doors have been constantly open, free to all. The East India Marine Society exists today as a board of trustees acting solely under the first clause of its organization, distributing the income of its fund among the families of its members "who may need it."

The Peabody Museum now occupies the East India Marine Society building, with the Marine Room and John Robinson Hall on the first floor, with the East India Marine Hall on the second floor; East Hall, erected in 1885, with the Natural History collection on the first floor and Ethnological collections on the second floor; Weld Hall, given by Dr. Charles Goddard Weld in 1906, with offices on the first floor and Ethnological collections on the second; Crowninshield-Loring building with the Loring Memorial Room on the first floor and the Francis B. Crowninshield Gallery on the second floor, given in 1952 by Mrs. Louise DuPont Crowninshield and Friends of Augustus Peabody Loring, Jr., and Rosamond Bowditch Loring.

The Peabody Museum is maintained and its work conducted entirely from trust funds and the contributions of generous friends; it has no other source of income and receives no public grants. The annual expenses have increased with the growth of the Museum

and the demands of the times, and its work and usefulness could be greatly advanced by additions to its funds and income.

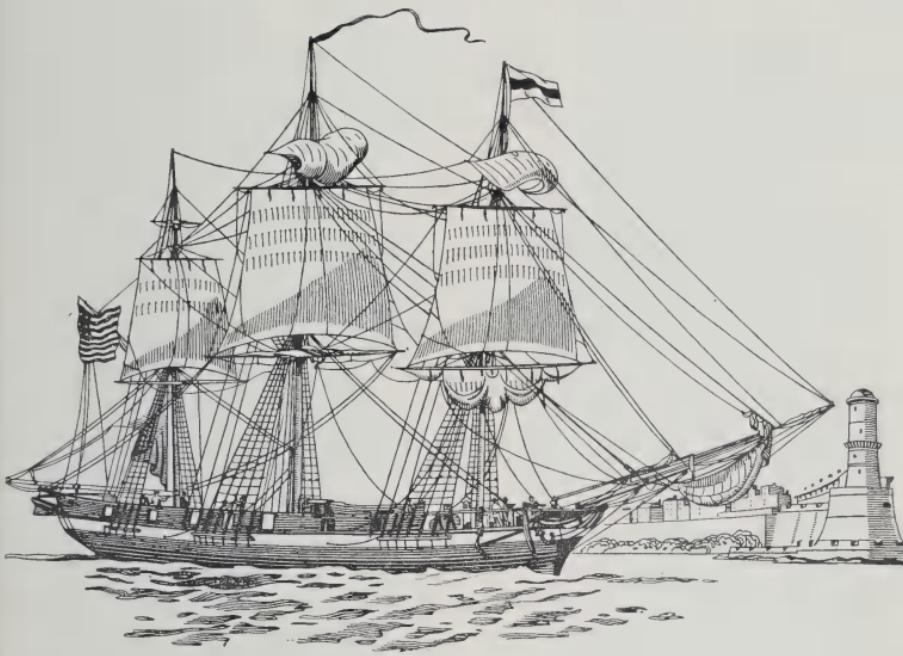
The Museum has published memoirs, reports, and catalogues of the Ethnological and Marine Collections and of various special exhibitions, pocket handbooks of natural history, etc. The publications and photographs of objects in the collections may be obtained of the Constable at the Museum, or by written application to the Director. Visitors who desire information about objects exhibited should request the Constable to refer them to an Officer of the Museum.

### THE MARITIME HISTORY DEPARTMENT

The foreign commerce of Salem is probably better documented than the comparable activity of any other port in the United States. There were two great periods of commercial activity in the city; the first extended from 1700 to 1760 and the second from 1785 to 1825. After 1825, the average merchant vessel had grown too large to come into Salem Harbor; and as a result, Salem merchants moved their business to other cities.

There is a common misconception that Salem was concerned with the clipper ships, but actually the smallest clipper ship was far too large to be docked in Salem. There is also another common misconception that slave trading was an important branch of Salem commerce. Salem vessels before the Revolution were too small to carry any large cargo of slaves; and after the Revolution, there are but a few documented cases of slave trading. This trade proved unpopular with the merchants concerned and also with the general public.

In 1785 Elias Hasket Derby sent the ship *Grank Turk* to the Cape of Good Hope. The master, seizing an opportunity that presented itself, pushed on to Canton. One of the relics brought back from this voyage is the Lowestoft punch bowl decorated with the portrait of the vessel.



SHIP FRANCIS, owned by Joseph Peabody, Salem, Mass.

The China trade has always had an important place in the minds of Salem people but statistics show it was one of the lesser branches of activity. Between 1785 and 1800, sixteen Salem vessels sailed for Canton; but during the same period, fifty vessels sailed from Salem to India. Trade with both of these places enriched the ethnological collections of the Museum. Captain Jonathan Carnes in 1795, discovering that pepper could be obtained in Sumatra, instituted regular commerce between that Island and Salem, and for the next twenty years this city dominated this lucrative trade. Pepper contracts signed with the local rajahs, bags of sample pepper, the heavy iron beams and weights used to weigh the pepper, and the large collection of Indonesian weapons are the result of this trade.

While the rich oriental trade was going on, Salem conducted an extensive commerce with the West Indies and Europe. Some three hundred portraits of merchants and ship captains, innumerable documents and log books, in fact the entire maritime history collection illustrate Salem's great activity in this field of endeavor.

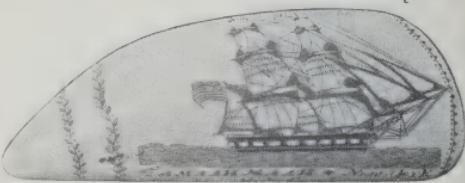


Astrolabe, 19th Century

The collection of books and objects relating to the science of navigation is one of the most complete in this country. The series of devices used to determine latitude is unusually complete, starting with the simple quadrant, similar to the one used by Columbus; the astrolabe, used for many years in Mediterranean countries; the cross-staff, the favorite instrument of Northern Europe; continuing to the backstaff or Davis quadrant, which remained the favorite of Yankee skippers even into the 19th century; and finally the Hadley quadrant and the sextant, which represent the highest development in this field.

Nearly all of the tools of navigation are to be found in the collection; logs and log lines, chronometers, compasses, circles of reflection, traverse boards, and charts.

The Museum is most fortunate in having an almost complete collection of the *American Practical Navigator* by Nathaniel Bowditch, first published in 1802 and to this day the standard work in navigation. Dr. Bowditch for many years



Scrimshaw work on a whale's tooth  
1825

was an official of the East India Marine Society, and as a result there is a fine collection of material relating to him.

Figureheads, used to decorate the bows of ships, are well represented in the collection. The miniature female figure carved by McIntire is typical of the late 18th Century vessel. The life-size figure of the French actor Talma, which was on the ship *Talma* of New York, shows the style of the early 19th Century while the huge figureheads of the *Rembrandt* and the *Grandee* show the tendency of the late 19th Century to carve them on a heroic scale. The only stern boards in the Museum are of the conventional eagle and flag type.

The collection of tools relating to maritime activity is unusually fine. There is a large collection of tools relating to ship building, rigging, sail-making, and cooperage.

The portrait collection, which numbers over two hundred paintings, is comprised entirely of likenesses of Salem merchants and sea captains. The portraits of Elias Hasket Derby, Joseph Peabody, and Nathaniel Silsbee are typical portraits of Salem merchants while those of Naservanjee, Eshing, and Lamqua show the oriental merchants of the period. Among the



Figurehead carved by  
Samuel McIntire

Salem sea captains are Jonathan Carnes, who discovered pepper growing in Sumatra; William Driver, famed for nicknaming the American flag "Old Glory;" and Benjamin Carpenter, who presented the magnificent crystal chandeliers which now hang in

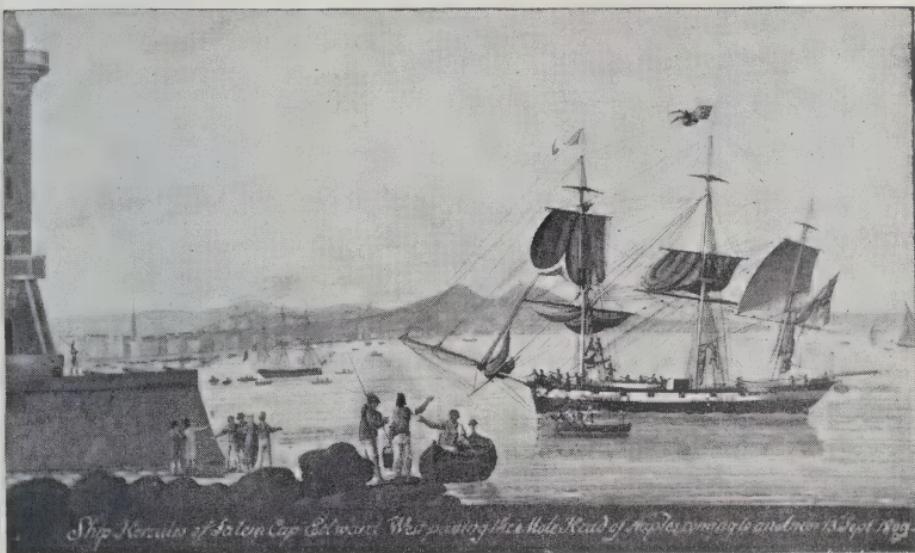
East India Marine Hall. The Museum has published a comprehensive catalog covering the entire portrait collection.



"Heaven and the Day of Judgment."

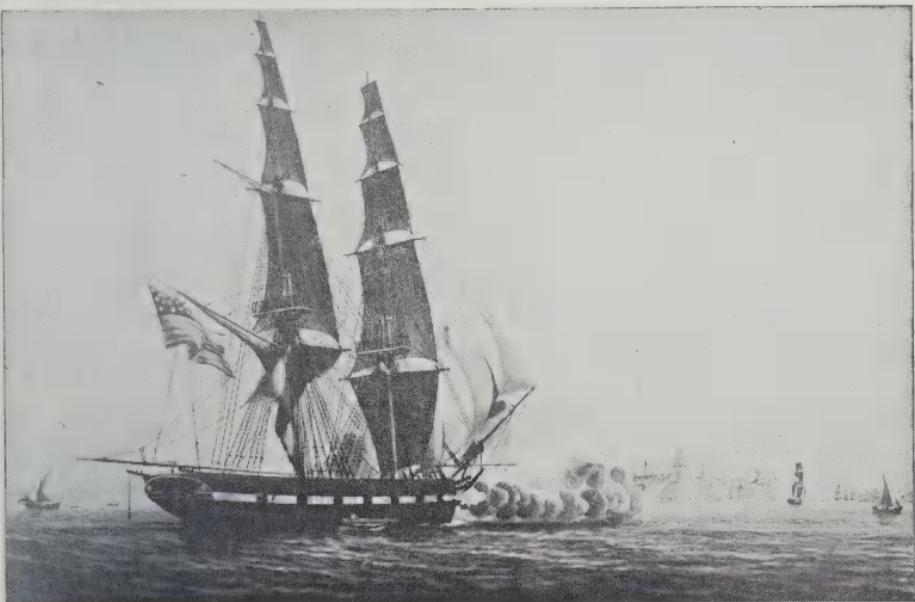
collection of his sketch books. Antoine had three sons; Antoine, Jr., Francois, and Frederic, and a daughter, Ursula Roux. The three former painters are well represented by numerous ship portraits, in addition, there is one water color by Ursula Roux, the only one

The ship portrait collection is unusually fine, comprising of some 600 water colors and oils and 850 prints of vessels, both sail and steam. The art of ship portraiture was a peculiar branch of painting in which the greatest emphasis was placed on draughtsmanship. The portraitists were unknown men who rarely ventured out of their very narrow field. The most famous name in ship portraiture is that of Roux, a family which practised its art in Marseilles from 1770 to 1900. The founder of the dynasty was Joseph Roux and the Museum owns two paintings by him. His son, Antoine (1765-1835), great favorite with American ship masters, is well represented in the collection, including a fine col-



*Ship Hercules of 5000 ton Cap Edward Was passing the Hole Head of Naples on 16th and 17th August 1809*

SHIP "HERCULES" AT NAPLES, 1809



PRIVATEER "GRAND TURK" ENTERING MARSEILLES, 1815

known in this country. Louis Roux, who painted until the beginning of the 20th century, is the last of the name.

Michele Felice Corné, born on the island of Elba, came to Salem in 1800. He painted and taught painting here leaving behind a fine collection of his work and that of his pupils.

The Mediterranean water colorists dominated the field during the first half of the 19th century and after their decline the most prolific group of painters were the Chinese who did ship portraits in oil, but who never developed the brilliance of the Mediterranean painters.

The ship model collection of the Museum, about 700 of them, is divided into three groups, European and American rigged models, builder's half models, and ethnological types. The art of model building for many years belonged exclusively to the sailor who built fine looking models to approximate scale of vessels he knew. The sailor models may lack some accuracy but they make up for this lack by showing details of construction and rigging that serve as guides to modern builders. Since the start of the 20th century the field of model building has been dominated by landsmen, many of whom have made exquisite and accurate replicas in miniature of famous vessels. The collection contains many fine specimens by both schools of builders.

Among the notable pieces is a contemporary model of an unidentified 18th century vessel. Also a seven foot model of the famous pepper trader, the ship *Friendship* of Salem, with brass cannon cast by natives of Palembang in Sumatra. This particular model was made by the ship's carpenter for the captain's son but since it was too big to be taken into the house it was given to the East India Marine Society in 1803.

A splendid model of the frigate *Constitution* was presented to the Society by Captain Isaac Hull in 1813 and shows exactly how "Old Ironsides" looked in the days of her greatest fame. This particular model was used as a table decoration at a banquet to Commodore Bainbridge in 1814 and during the dinner her minia-

ture guns were loaded to fire a salute, which resulted in extensive damage to the rigging. Repairs were made by British prisoners of war quartered in Salem. Among the sailor's models are the various types of ships, barks, and brigs that carried on Salem's foreign trade; also coasting schooners, fishing boats and various small craft that maintained our domestic economy.

Among the outstanding models built by present day craftsmen is the excellent one of the four-masted bark *Kenilworth* by the late Carroll Ray Sawyer, a veritable marvel for its painstaking accuracy. Richard Orr's work is represented by a splendid model of the famous clipper ship *Red Jacket*. A model of the *Fanny M.*, a Piscataqua gundalow, a now vanished salt river craft, and the Indian Head fishing schooner, *Quonnapowatt*, both by D. Foster Taylor are among the examples of modern workmanship.

The fine and varied collection of builder's half hull models, owned by the Museum, show every type of commercial vessel, and is particularly rich in fishing vessels built at Essex, Massachusetts. The builders' model is a wooden pattern of the hull used to shape the ribs of a vessel. Of great interest is the half model of the ketch *Eliza* of Salem, built by Enos Briggs in 1794. The half hull lift model must have been made in 1793 and is the oldest documented lift model known.

In addition to builders' models there is an excellent group of plans of vessels, including some of the original plans of Donald MacKay, that can be used by those interested in marine architecture.

The models of non-European types of craft are displayed with the ethnological collection.

In addition, there are collections of furnishings used on ship-board, a fine exhibit of Liverpool ware, scrimshaw and many other items relating to shipping and commerce.

## THE NATURAL HISTORY DEPARTMENT

One of the objects of the East India Marine Society was to collect natural curiosities, and the early catalogues show that this was carried out. The natural history collection commenced in 1799 with an elephant's tooth presented by Captain Jonathan Carnes, and during the early years it was a general mixture of animals, insects, birds, and minerals from all over the world. Among the notable specimens displayed, was the first penguin exhibited in this country, collected in 1828, and a Malay red fighting cock that was the ancestor of the famous American breed, the Rhode Island Red. In 1833, there was enough interest in natural history as a science to bring into being the Essex County Natural History Society, which in 1848 united with the Essex Historical Society and became the Essex Institute. In 1867, when the Peabody Academy of Science was established, the collections of the Essex County Natural History Society were transferred to that institution. In 1942 it was decided to restrict the natural history collections to Essex County.

Essex County is one of the most interesting ecological regions in the United States. Its varied topography ranges from the desert-like sand dunes in the northern part with the salt marshes behind them to the rocky southern shore, while the inland sections are quite hilly. In proportion to its population, Essex County has more forest than any other comparable area in the United States. In addition, the County is in a transitional area between two life zones; the Canadian Zone, with its white birch and Norway pine and; the Carolinian Zone with its small magnolia, a southern plant that grows wild in this area.

The Museum has a fine collection of rocks and minerals of Essex County containing some seven hundred specimens collected by John H. Sears, a former curator. Unfortunately, the local minerals are drab and unattractive, and so no permanent display is made, but they may be examined upon application to the Director.

The botanical collection consists of one of the earliest herbaria in existence in this state and contains over five thousand sheets of plants. A very complete collection of Essex County woods was made by John Robinson, who for many years was the curator. Both of these collections can be seen upon application to the Director. The George E. Morris Collection of eleven hundred water color paintings of mushrooms, the F. H. Silsbee Collection of four hundred and twenty-five similar water color sketches, and the Mrs. John H. Thorndike Collection of two hundred and sixty-five water color paintings of flowers may also be seen upon application.

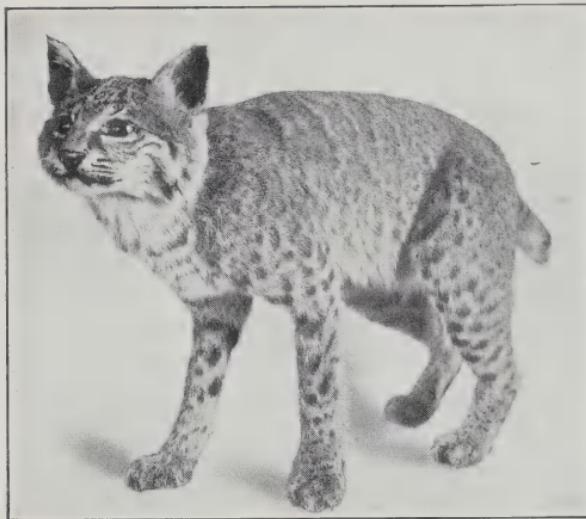
The marine invertebrates are represented by the star fish, sea-urchin, crabs, and lobsters, and other similar species.

Insects of Essex County are well represented by a collection of many thousand specimens arranged by Albert P. Morse, a former curator. Contained in the collection is a group of North American coleoptera numbering ten thousand specimens of two thousand seven hundred species, presented by F. Waldo Dodge. These collections are used from time to time for current displays and are also available for study.

The salt water fish are numerous and many quite striking, ranging from a large cod fish weighing eighty pounds to a tremendous sunfish. In all, some sixty-eight specimens of salt water fish can be found in this area. Also a number of local fresh water fish are on display.

The amphibians include frogs, toads, and salamanders. Of great interest is Fowler's Toad, a new species discovered locally in 1863. It is represented by two skeletons, the gift of the discoverer, and by paintings made by Augustus Fowler. Colored casts of twelve specimens of serpents are shown. All except two are harmless; the copperhead and banded rattlesnake, the only two poisonous specimens, are extremely rare in this county. Nine species of turtles are known to exist in the county and all are represented by specimens. Two sea turtles are on display; Kemp's or Ridley's turtle

and a leatherback turtle taken in Rockport weighing seven hundred and fifty pounds.



Wildcat killed in West Peabody, 1920

ter, still exist and can be found with a little searching. All mammals still existing within our area are on display except the White-tailed Deer, which is excluded because of its size.

The sea mammals represented are the Black Fish and the sperm whale, also the common harbor seal. In all there are some fifty-five species of mammals to be found in the area, and most of them are shown in the collection.

Essex County has reported more different species of birds than any other section in the Northeast. The total number runs to 380 species, of which all but ten are represented in the ornithological collection. The Ipswich sparrow was first collected at Ipswich in the county. The overlapping of life zones and the proximity of the ocean bring in many strays from other parts. From the west

The large mammals of Essex County were very early extirpated. The moose was killed off by 1733; but amazingly enough, in 1940 one reappeared within the boundary of the county. The Black Bear disappeared before the Revolution; but within recent years, they have been seen again. The smaller mammals, wild cats, foxes, raccoons, mink, and ot-

have come, as accidental visitors, Gray Kingbird, Says Phoebe, Clay-colored Sparrow, and the Lark Sparrow. The White-eyed Vireo, Black Vulture, and the White Pelican are rare visitors from the South. Many of the strays from the North have not been down since the spruce forests disappeared locally but in the past Richardson's Owl, Hawk Owl and the Canada Jay have been sighted. One of the rarer visitors is the Ivory Gull whose home is on the edge of the Arctic ice pack. Occasional visitors from Europe are Curlew Sandpiper, Little Gull and the very rare European Black-headed Gull.

The purpose of the collection is to cover the Natural History of Essex County and this purpose is well carried out since the Peabody Museum has one of the finest collections covering a given area.

#### THE DEPARTMENT OF ETHNOLOGY

The ethnological collections of the Peabody Museum were started in 1799 with the gift of a two stemmed pipe from Sumatra. By 1821 the printed catalogue shows a fine lot of material from foreign lands illustrating modes of life. True, the motive to collect curios was the basic one, but very early there can be seen traces of systematic collecting. Captains Clifford Crowninshield and Matthew Folger gave jointly a number of pieces of tapa, showing an early interest in the bark cloth of the Pacific Islands. Most of the rare items in the Museum were brought back by these early



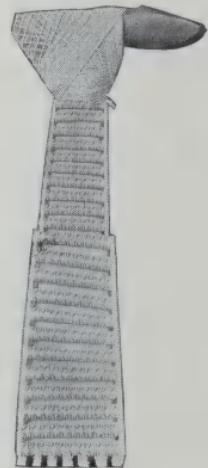
Golden Eagle, killed in  
Marblehead, 1915



Cannibal bowl, 49 inches long,  
Solomon Islands

captain-collectors. Through the years the worthless curio type of objects have been removed from the collections with the result, an amazing, early and well documented mass of material remains, organized along scientific lines.

The Polynesian Collection of the Peabody Museum is the finest in the country and has an international reputation because of the great age of the objects and the excellent data accompanying them. Polynesia, bounded by Hawaii, Easter Island, and New Zealand, is the area generally referred to as the "South Seas" and has been romanticized by travelers for generations. The inhabitants are a handsome and hospitable group who were quite willing to trade with strangers. War clubs, wooden bowls, tapa cloth, personal ornaments, spears and fish hooks flowed back to the Museum in a steady stream. The natives were willing, in fact eager to give up their stone adzes for ones of iron and their bark cloth for cheap western calicoes. It is now considered fashionable to bemoan the passing of the old culture and the introduction of the new one but to the Polynesians this was not a time of tragedy but one of sheer delight in the novelties they had acquired. New diseases unfortunately were introduced too, which resulted in the decimation of the islands. Through the years friends of the Museum have added to the original collection: Mr. Stephen Willard Phillips and Mrs. Stephen H. Phillips purchased for the Museum the Goodale Collection made by Rev. and Mrs. Asa Thurston between 1820 and 1868. The Thurstons were among the first missionaries to Hawaii and hence were able to find many objects of pure native origin. In addition, Mr. Phillips



Mangaian adz

has added many fine single pieces to the Polynesian section. Dr. Charles G. Weld purchased the J. S. Emerson Collection, which contains a remarkable collection of stone artifacts. The sea captains brought back a fine series of weapons, fish hooks, fans, tapa, canoe models, and wooden bowls from all of the Polynesian groups. Among the unique pieces are; the only known specimen of tapa, Marquesan outrigger canoe, Hawaiian tattooing instrument and a Hawaiian throwing club. Many other pieces while not unique are excessively rare.

Micronesia, comprising Gilbert, Marshall, Caroline, and Pelew Islands, has a culture much less spectacular than that of Polynesia. This region was but little visited by American traders in the early days and even less when the islands were taken over by the Germans. During the rule of the Japanese all foreigners were excluded. This area was



Figurehead of a New Zealand war canoe  
sea captains brought back a fine series of weapons, fish hooks, fans, tapa, canoe models, and wooden bowls from all of the Polynesian groups. Among the unique pieces are; the only known specimen of tapa, Marquesan outrigger canoe, Hawaiian tattooing instrument and a Hawaiian throwing club. Many other pieces while not unique are excessively rare.



Hawaiian Idol



Unique model of Fiji temple

China trade. Western goods had little sale in China but there was a great demand for beche-de-mer, a slimy sea slug, and sandalwood, both of which were obtainable in Fiji. Traders not only visited the islands to gather these products but also left an agent in residence to prepare a cargo for the next voyage. Between the merchants and agents a splendid group of artifacts was obtained from the southern part of the Fijis between 1811 and 1845. Clubs, bowls, tapa beaters, spears, canoe models, and a unique model of a two towered temple were presented by members of the society. In 1951 Mr. Stephen Willard Phillips added to the Fijian collection 124 objects, from the northern islands, a group meagrely represented previously, that had formerly been in the Gardner collection in England. Previous to this the Peabody Museum collection of Fijian material had been

frequented by missionaries during the 19th century and through them pieces of native material drifted back. The few pieces collected by the members of the East India Marine Society and subsequent additions from other sources have built a well rounded collection of material from this area.

The remaining islands of the Pacific are grouped together under the name of Melanesia, comprising; Fiji, New Guinea, Bismarck, New Caledonia, Santa Cruz, and Solomon Islands. Most of the material from these islands in the Museum is much more recent than the Polynesian collection with the exception of the Fijian artifacts. Early traders frequented the Fiji Islands to gather material for the

noteworthy but with Mr. Phillips' gift, it became one of the most important ones in the world.

The other Melanesian islands are represented by a fine but not unusual collection. The Navy Department gave a splendid Solomon Islands collection made by Lt. Comdr. John Burke during World War II.

The Indonesian area, Sumatra, Java, Celebes, Philippines, and adjacent islands, are but slightly represented in the museum. Brasses from the Philippines, group textiles from Sumatra, and a fine group of weapons comprise the bulk of the collection.

China and India contributed material of the curio or trade variety. The early traders found a well developed civilization that had its own collectors hence they were able to find only material of a relatively inconsequential nature.

The African material consists of a handful of objects from North Africa including ancient Egypt, specimens from Zanzibar, and a general collection from the rest of Africa with a fine lot of weapons mainly from the George C. Stone collection.

The American Indian collection is a by-product of the other ethnological activity but it is interesting to note that a number of rare and valuable pieces came in at an early date. A full sized Penobscot birch bark canoe was in the museum in 1826. Model canoes by Micmac and Malicite Indians were added in 1802. The oldest known Iroquois elm bark canoe model was given in 1826. Later additions have built up the material into a fine collection especially on eastern Indians. The Indians of South and Central America are represented by the smallest collection in the museum.

Edward S. Morse, for many years Director of the Museum, went to Japan in 1877 to study marine biology. This was the first of several visits. Japan, at that time, was undergoing the great change from East to West and consequently the older material was being discarded. Morse realizing his opportunity began to collect representative material to illustrate Japanese culture. Dr. Charles G. Weld became interested and later built a hall to house

the large quantity of material imported by the two men. Fine arts was disregarded and emphasis was placed on the ordinary objects of household and common use. Pottery, basketry, textiles, metal work, tools, arms, games, religious objects were all collected. Dr. Jiro Harada of the Imperial Household Museum in Tokyo stated the Museum collection is the best of its kind in the world.

The ethnological collections, 40,000 of the Peabody Museum cover all the non-European world with special emphasis on the Pacific Islands and Japan. About one-third of the material is on display but the remainder can be seen upon application to the Director.

## CHAPTER VIII

### HISTORIC LANDMARKS

### PUBLIC BUILDINGS

**Almshouse.** As the Neck is entered from lower Essex street, on the left is seen the City Almshouse built of brick. Adjoining it is the city farm. The almshouse was erected in 1816, from the plans of Charles Bulfinch, and the next year was visited by President Monroe, as one of the sights of Salem. Salem had then a great number of drifting sea-faring men, who, having no homes, had to be provided for, which necessitated a large building.

**State Armory.** The State Armory, 136 Essex street, is occupied as Headquarters by four units and the Medical Detachment of the 102nd Field Artillery Battalion, Massachusetts National Guard. The units are Headquarters Battery, Service Battery, Battery A and Battery C. The Battalion was formerly the 2d Battalion, 102nd Field Artillery Regiment and was separated from the parent organization during a reorganization during World War II. Immediately after World War I, the 102d Field Artillery replaced the 2nd Corps of Independent Cadets and Company H, 8th Regiment M. V. M. It stands on land formerly occupied in part by the residence of Governor Bradstreet. The present structure was built in 1908, after removing the residence of the late Col. Francis Peabody, which was built in 1820 by Capt. Joseph Peabody, as a residence for his eldest son, Joseph Augustus. In 1890 this house was purchased and a drill shed added. The "Banqueting Hall" was an interesting feature of the house, added in Colonel Peabody's day. In this room Prince Arthur of England was entertained at dinner on the occasion of his attending the funeral of George Peabody, the banker, February 8, 1870. It was elaborately ornamented in carved oak, in the Gothic style of the Elizabethan period. At one end a stained-glass window of four panels contained representations of both sides of the Massachusetts seal, the

seal of the City of Salem, and the Peabody coat-of-arms. At the opposite end was a fireplace with Dutch jambs surmounted by a heavy chimney-piece of oak elaborately carved and containing niches ornamented with statuettes. The central figure was Queen Victoria, supported by mailed figures at each side. A lion surmounted the whole, with a guardsman and priest on either hand. When the house was taken down in 1908, this carved oak finish was preserved, and is now utilized in one of the small halls in the new Masonic Temple, Washington street.

The drill shed of the present Armory is 170 feet long and 86 feet wide. In the Armory are two portraits by J. Harvey Young, who, as a Salem boy, lived on Oliver street, and became a distinguished portrait painter. They are deserving of special notice for their historic and romantic, as well as artistic, interest. One is the portrait of Colonel Elmer E. Ellsworth, painted from life while he was in Boston and Salem with his celebrated Chicago Zouaves. The companion picture, that of Lieutenant Brownell, was also painted in Boston from life, and in the same uniform he wore at the time he shot Jackson, Ellsworth's assassin, at Alexandria, Va., May 24, 1861. These two portraits and one other were all that Mr. Young saved from the great fire in Boston in 1872, and soon after he presented them to the Cadets.

The Salem Cadet Band, under the leadership of Jean Missud, gained more than a national reputation. The Salem Brass Band was one of the oldest organizations of this character in the State. Salem has always been noted for its excellent military and concert bands and its orchestras. The leadership of Jerome H. Smith of the old Salem Band, and the connection of Patrick S. Gilmore with the same organization as leader, which he left to take charge of his famous Boston and New York military bands, and later his gigantic jubilee concerts, will always be remembered in Salem.

**City Hall**, 93 Washington street, was built from the surplus revenue of the United States treasury distributed in 1837 to the states, and by them among the towns and cities. It cost, when furnished, about \$23,000, and is perhaps the only municipal structure in existence paid for without taxing the city. In 1876 it was

enlarged by an extension in the rear. In front is a plain, but rather effective granite facade, surmounted with a gilded eagle, carved by McIntire, and originally placed on the fine wooden gateway at the western entrance of the Common. This gateway disappeared in 1850.

The first floor of the City Hall is devoted to the various city offices. On the wall at the right of the entrance door is placed a memorial tablet for the sinking of the U. S. S. *Maine*, which is made from metal recovered from the ship. On the opposite wall is placed a tablet presented to the city by the officers and crew of the U. S. S. *Salem*, in recognition of the entertainment given them during Old Home Week in 1909.

On the second floor of the hall, the Mayor's offices occupy the entire front of the building and contain, among other portraits, those of Gen. Henry Kemble Oliver, Leverett Saltonstall, the first mayor of the city, and a striking likeness of the Marquis de Lafayette, a copy by Charles Osgood, from a painting by the electrician, S. F. B. Morse. Here is a portrait of Washington, the work of Jane Stuart, copied from a half-length portrait painted by her father. Across the small hall from the Mayor's chamber, is the Council Chamber, which remains substantially as to its furniture and appointments, with the exception of its electric lighting, as it was arranged in 1838. On the walls of this well-designed and dignified chamber are pictures of interest and merit. Above the President's chair hangs a full-length portrait of Washington, a copy of the original painted by Stuart in 1797 for William Kerin Constable of Brooklyn, N. Y. This portrait was the gift of Abiel Abbot Low of New York, a native of Salem. On one side of this portrait is placed the national flag, and on the other is the municipal standard, which was established in 1925 and is a very beautiful flag of Yale blue with the city seal in the original colors. Perhaps the most notable artistic work in the hall is a portrait of President Andrew Jackson, by Maj. R. E. W. Earle, of the general's military family, done in 1833, at the time of his northern

tour in the course of which he visited Salem. It represents him as a younger man and in a much less conventional light than the more familiar likenesses.

There are several other portraits of interest, notably that of Gen. Philip H. Sheridan for whom the Salem Post No. 34 of the G. A. R. was named. On the right of the President's chair hangs a copy of the so-called Indian Deed, a curious old parchment, dated 1686, upon which is beautifully engrossed in obsolete hand-writing a warranty deed of all the land in town, from the heirs of Nanepashemet, to the selectmen of Salem, in trust for our people. These Indians undertook for the moderate consideration of twenty pounds, to confirm and establish the title of the white colonists beyond all question, and affixed their marks in shapes which look like bows and arrows, tomahawks, fish-hooks, samp-bowls, and tobacco pipes. At that time the Colonial Charters were in danger of revocation by the King. The original deed is now preserved in the vault of the City Clerk's office, where it may be seen on application. In the City Clerk's office there may also be seen the original records of Salem, dating from 1634 to the present time.

The City Hall is open from 8.30 a. m. to 4 p. m. on every week day except holidays. On Saturdays it is closed all day. The city messenger will show the rooms to visitors.

**Court Houses.** COURT HOUSE OF 1692. In 1672 the first meeting house was removed and its timbers preserved, and in 1676 re-erected into a town, court, school and watch house, about four rods westerly of its original site. The next year the building was removed, being unfinished, to a place nearly opposite Lynde street, in the middle of Washington street. This was the court house from 1679 until 1718. The first story was used for a schoolroom and the second story for public meetings and the sessions of the county courts. In this chamber the persons accused of witchcraft were tried in 1692. A bronze tablet, ordered by the city authorities, is attached to the side of the Masonic Temple, 70 Washington street. It reads as follows:

NEARLY OPPOSITE THIS SPOT, STOOD IN THE MIDDLE OF THE STREET, A BUILDING DEVOTED, FROM 1677 UNTIL 1718, TO MUNICIPAL AND JUDICIAL USES. IN IT, IN 1692, WERE TRIED AND CONDEMNED FOR WITCHCRAFT MOST OF THE NINETEEN PERSONS WHO SUFFERED DEATH ON THE GALLOWS. GILES COREY WAS HERE PUT TO TRIAL ON THE SAME CHARGE, AND, REFUSING TO PLEAD, WAS TAKEN AWAY AND PRESSED TO DEATH. IN JANUARY, 1693, TWENTY-ONE PERSONS WERE TRIED HERE FOR WITCHCRAFT, OF WHOM EIGHTEEN WERE ACQUITTED, AND THREE CONDEMNED, BUT LATER SET FREE, TOGETHER WITH ABOUT 150 ACCUSED PERSONS, IN A GENERAL DELIVERY WHICH OCCURRED IN MAY.

*(See chapter on Witchcraft, p. 16)*

COURT HOUSE AND TOWN HOUSE OF THE REVOLUTION, Washington street. When the old court house, in which the witchcraft trials took place, was discontinued for such use, in 1718, a new town and court house was built just west of the Daniel Low Co. building, in what is now a portion of Washington street, the building facing toward Essex street. It was fifty feet long, thirty feet wide, and twenty feet stud. The first story was the town house and the second story the court room. It was destined to be the theatre of some of the most important events in the history, not only of Salem, but of the country. A dinner was given to Sir William Pepperrell in this town house, July 4, 1746, on his way from the siege of Louisburg. In it the General Court was held in 1728 and 1729; the citizens in public town meeting denounced the stamp act of 1765, and the tax on tea in 1769, the General Court was convened here in June, 1774, and on the seventeenth it chose delegates to the first Continental Congress, in defiance of Governor Gage, this being the last General Assembly of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay. General Gage lived during that summer in the Hooper house known as "The Lindens" in Danvers, only three miles away, the same beautiful house which was removed to Washington in 1935. August 12th, a regiment of British regulars came from Boston by water, and the next day encamped on

Winter Island. August 24, hearing of an obnoxious town meeting that was being held in the town house for the purpose of choosing delegates to attend a patriotic convention at Ipswich, the governor ordered a detachment of the troops to break up the meeting. Eighty soldiers were despatched, stopping at the foot of Essex street to fix bayonets and load, but when they reached the spot where the Essex Institute now stands, they learned that the business of the meeting was over and the voters had dispersed, and they returned to their encampment on the island. September 5, the governor called a meeting of the General Court at the Town House for October 5. Believing that immediate danger here was over, the troops were ordered back to Boston. September 18, the governor found that he had been misled in his idea of the submission of the people, and so recalled the order for the meeting of the General Court. In spite of the recall, however, over ninety representatives had gathered on the day preceding the date for the opening of the court. The leading patriots, Samuel Adams, John Hancock, Benjamin Lincoln, and others, were here. On that day a chest of tea had been taken from a man who had brought it from Boston, and in the presence of over two hundred people it was burned in the middle of Court, now Washington street. At three o'clock the next morning fire was discovered in a warehouse belonging to Col. Peter Frye, a loyalist, who lived on Essex street, where the Perley block now stands. His house, the meeting-house of the Tabernacle Church, which stood next easterly of the warehouse, and dwelling-houses, barns, stores, warehouses, and other buildings, extending to Town House Square and along Washington street were destroyed. The Town House caught fire, the flames being extinguished by the assistance of Marblehead firemen, but not until the paint and cornices had been burned off and the windows cracked by the heat. While the ruins of the buildings were still hot and smoking, the representatives convened in the Town House, and, without organizing, waited all day out of respect for the government, hoping that the governor might come and administer their oaths. He did not appear, and they met again the next morning, organized as a

Provincial Congress, and chose a committee to draw up resolutions. The next day Friday, October 7, 1774, they again met, adopted the resolutions, and adjourned to Concord. These resolutions, as printed in the Essex Gazette the next Tuesday, may be seen at the Essex Institute. This was the first formal act of the Province in putting itself in open antagonism to the British government. The chairman was John Hancock, afterwards President of the Continental Congress and first signer of the Declaration of Independence. The secretary was Benjamin Lincoln, afterwards General Lincoln, whom Washington chose to receive the sword of Cornwallis at the surrender of Yorktown in 1781. A tablet on the northwest corner of the Daniel Low Company building, recording these events and placed there by the city, bears the following inscription:

THREE RODS WEST OF THIS SPOT STOOD, FROM 1718 UNTIL 1785, THE TOWN HOUSE. HERE GOVERNOR BURNET CONVENED THE GENERAL COURT IN 1728 AND 1729. A TOWN MEETING HELD HERE IN 1765 PROTESTED AGAINST THE STAMP ACT, AND ANOTHER IN 1769 DENOUNCED THE TAX ON TEA. HERE MET, IN 1774, THE LAST GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE PROVINCE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY, WHICH, JUNE 17, IN DEFIANCE OF GOVERNOR GAGE, CHOSE DELEGATES TO THE FIRST CONTINENTAL CONGRESS. THE HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY WAS THEREUPON DISSOLVED AND THE ELECTION OF A NEW HOUSE TO MEET AT SALEM, WAS ORDERED BY THE GOVERNOR, BUT THIS, BY LATER PROCLAMATION, HE REFUSED TO RECOGNIZE.. IN CONTEMPT OF HIS AUTHORITY, THE MEMBERS MET IN THIS TOWN HOUSE, OCTOBER 5, AND AFTER ORGANIZING, RESOLVED THEMSELVES INTO A PROVINCIAL CONGRESS, AND ADJOURNED TO CONCORD, THERE TO ACT WITH OTHER DELEGATES AS THE FIRST PROVINCIAL CONGRESS OF MASSACHUSETTS.

THE COURT HOUSE AND TOWN HOUSE built in 1785, stood in the middle of Washington street, nearly opposite the Tabernacle Church. The Registry of Deeds and town offices were here. It was an admired work of McIntire, and oil paintings of it are at the Essex Institute. The construction of the tunnel under the

street, in 1839, necessitated its removal. Here Washington was presented to the townspeople, October 29, 1789, while on his eastern tour.



COURT HOUSES ON FEDERAL STREET

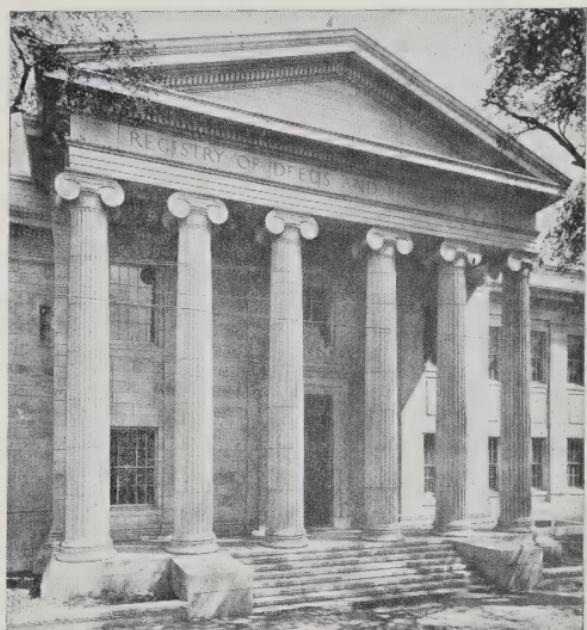
**THE COURT HOUSES ON FEDERAL STREET.** The granite Court House, built in 1839-1841, was opened for public use, March 21, 1842. It is one hundred and five feet long, fifty-five feet wide, and two stories in height. Its four columns, two at each end, are of the Corinthian order. They are granite monoliths, and their flutes and capitals are said to be copied from those in the Tower of the Winds at Athens. Each column is three feet, ten inches in diameter and thirty-two feet high, including the base and capital. The walls are of solid granite, and all the floors are supported by brick arches. The architect was Richard Bond of Boston, and the principal contractors were Samuel S. Standley and Henry Russell, Jr., masons, of Salem. From the time of its opening until October 3, 1862, this building was the only court house in

Salem. The Courts were held in the upper story, while the lower was devoted to county offices. The Court House was remodeled inside in 1889, and the whole lower floor devoted to the registry of deeds and the second story to the probate office and court room. In 1910 the interior of the building was remodeled again to accommodate the county offices.

The land adjoining this building was purchased in 1857, and a brick court house built thereon in 1861. The building was formally dedicated to the use of the courts, October 3, 1862. Enoch Fuller was the architect, and Simeon Flint and Abraham Towle the contractors. In 1887, the construction of an additional fire-proof building was commenced in the rear of the brick court house. It was finished in 1889. This addition, while annexed to the court house of 1861, overshadows it both in size and architectural pretensions. It was dedicated February 2, 1889, and contains on the lower floor a court room and the large and commodious rooms occupied by the clerk of the courts. In the second story are two court rooms and the spacious room provided for the law library. On entering it one is confronted with a fireplace so massive that, like the one in the Castle of Chillon, it seems to dominate the whole room. Portraits of distinguished members of the bar hang around the room.

A fine full-length portrait of Chief Justice Lemuel Shaw, painted by the late William M. Hunt, hangs over the judge's bench in the front court room, and is considered a masterpiece of that distinguished artist. But the attraction in this court house, which brings to it annually thousands of visitors from all parts of this country, as well as many from foreign lands, is to be found in the office of the clerk of the courts on the ground floor. Here the curious may find, in manuscript, all the testimony preserved in the famous witchcraft trials, and the original death warrant of Bridget Bishop, with the return of the sheriff thereon, which return, serious and solemn as the business was, provokes a smile when we read that he "caused her to be hanged by the neck till she was dead and buried"; and find that, as if realizing that he

was getting a little *ultra vires*, he has drawn his pen through the words "and buried." Here also may be seen the "witch pins" which, it is said, the afflicted ones claimed were used by the accused as among the instruments of torture.



REGISTRY OF DEEDS AND PROBATE COURT  
BUILDING

dating from 1640, disclosing many a clue to old family estates and relationships.

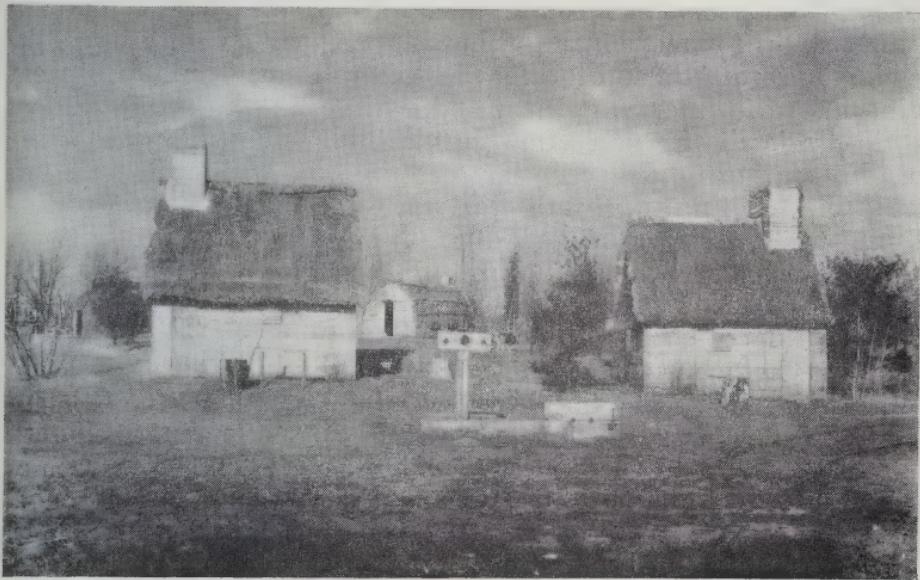
The Registry of Deeds and Probate Office are open every day except legal holidays and Sundays from 8.30 a. m. to 4.30 p. m., except Saturdays, when they are closed all day.

The fine granite building occupied by the Registry of Deeds and Probate Court, was opened for use July 31, 1909. Clarence H. Blackall of Boston was the architect. The cost, including the site was \$441,469.16.

There is not much to interest the general visitor in this building, but the antiquary and genealogist delight to pore over the old records of wills and deeds,

## THE PIONEERS' VILLAGE

**The Pioneers' Village**, in Forest River Park, South Salem, reproduces the four-year-old Salem of 1630. It was built in 1930 as Salem's part of the state-wide celebration of Massachusetts' 300th birthday, and represents the settlement when Governor Winthrop came with the charter under Charles I.



THE PILLORY AND STOCKS IN THE VILLAGE SQUARE

On a plot of three acres, landscaped to represent a section of the wilderness cleared by the settlers, are the village street, where the pillory and stocks stand and twelve buildings, reproductions of the dugouts and "English" wigwams that were the first shelters, "to shut off the short showers," the thatch-roofed cottages, typical of the homes left in England, and the "governor's

fayre house," with its huge central chimney and wide fireplaces, representing the best in housing at that time in New England.

Completing the picture of domestic life in this part of the New World three hundred years ago are the reproductions of the early industries, which show how timber was cut in the saw-pit; the method of splitting logs and making shingles; how indispensable was the blacksmith's forge, where nails, tools and household implements were made; the method of making salt; how corn was ground, and soap and candles were manufactured; the gardens where herbs for medicinal and culinary purposes were grown; the plots for vegetables and tobacco; and complete costuming for every station in life—clergy, military and civil.

Every detail of construction, furnishing and costuming has been worked out to follow accurately descriptions found in the letters sent back to England by the early settlers and from information furnished by our own and British museums. A professor of American history, expressing his opinion of the village, wrote, "It is actually worth a library of volumes on early settlement."

The Village is open daily until dusk throughout the season, from June to the middle of November. Admission fee. The Pioneers' Village is operated by the Park Department of the City of Salem.

**The Ship "Arbella."** In the Spring of 1930, The Massachusetts Bay Tercentenary, Inc., purchased the schooner "Lavolta," which had the approximate dimensions of the Charter Ship that brought Winthrop and his party to Salem in 1630. After such changes in her rigging and general appearance as would approximate, for purposes of pageantry, the appearance of a ship of the period, this new "Arbella" entered Salem Harbor, June 12, 1930, three hundred years to a day after the original. Three years later, the remnants of this ship came into possession of the city of Salem. Since then, after most careful research, she has been entirely re-rigged and refinished within and without for the purpose of acquainting the public, by a full-size model, with the essential characteristics of a merchant ship of the early years of the seventeenth century.

The steeve of the mammoth bowsprit from which the spritsail yard hangs, the rake of the masts, the lateen-rigged mizzen, fighting tops, the chains, gun ports, high forecastle, lofty poop with



THE "ARBELLA"

From a painting by Philip Little, 1930

steep tumble home, the whip staff, the great cabin, the lesser cabins, the steerage, the gun deck, the cargo hold, pumps and anchors, are all in evidence. Not only are pictures, descriptions and measurements of the ship "Arbella" lacking, they are not known to

exist for any ship of the period except in the sketchiest form. The work has been made possible chiefly through the research of Mr. R. C. Anderson of London, England, recognized as the outstanding authority on ship construction and rigging of the period, creator of the Plymouth Model.

While work on the ship was being done she was tied up at Langmaid's wharf, and her curious rigging against the sky drew many visitors. In the summer of 1937 she was shown at Salem Willows and plans were made for permanent docking at Pioneers' Village in Forest River Park, where, as the type of ship which brought the early settlers, she adds to the interest in this reproduction of an early settlement.

## THE ROPES MEMORIAL

**The Ropes Memorial** (318 Essex street) was established under the wills of Mary Pickman Ropes and Eliza Orne Ropes, and is conducted by a board of trustees incorporated in 1912. It was first opened to the public on June 25, 1913. The trust includes the family mansion, its contents and the surrounding land, together with a general maintenance fund and a special fund for botanical



ROPE'S MEMORIAL

lectures. The wills provide, with certain restrictions, that the mansion shall be open to visitors who may desire to see the antique furniture, china, etc., and that a garden shall be maintained on the premises and that lectures on botany shall be given annually.

**The House** was built about 1719. It was bought by Judge Nathaniel Ropes (1727-1774) in 1768 and remained in possession

of the Ropes family, in direct line, until 1907. Judge Ropes was a Loyalist and his home was attacked by a mob of patriots on March 17, 1774, while he lay dying. Furniture owned by the Judge and his descendants, family portraits, old silver, costumes, documents, letters and various small personal relics, all exquisitely preserved, in an attractive setting, furnish an excellent example of the home of a well-to-do-family in the early nineteenth century days. A special room devoted to the double set of Chinese table-ware and choice glass imported in 1816 for the wedding outfit of Sally Ropes, who married her cousin Joseph Orne, is perhaps the most noteworthy thing in the collection.

**The Garden** in the rear of the house is laid out in the old formal style, with shrubs around the borders and masses of bright flowers in the central beds; suitable arbors and seats are provided for rests. The lawns at each side are shaded by fine old trees and in the spring the borders are bright with flowering bulbs.

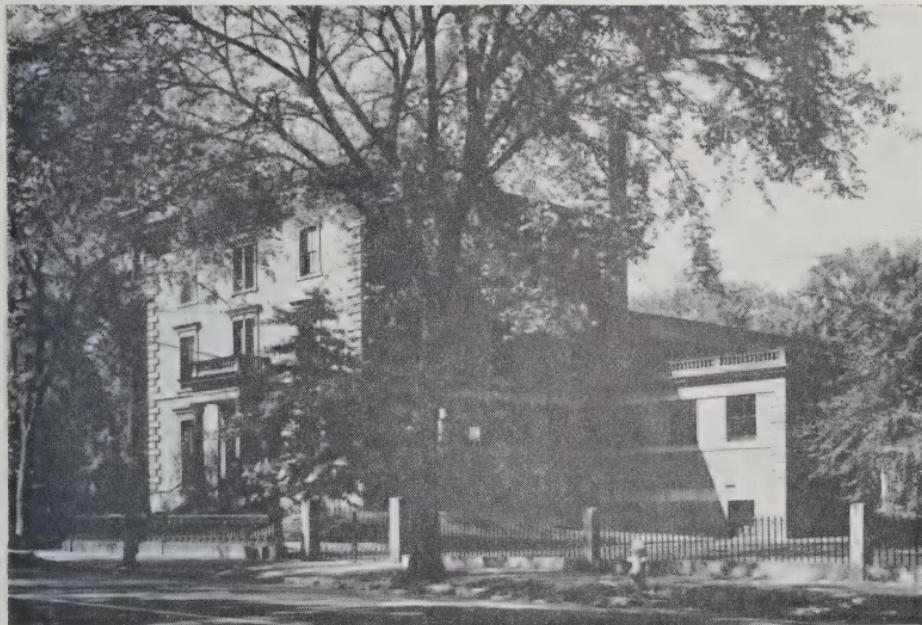
The botanical lectures are given each year in January and February by eminent instructors, and the classes consist chiefly of teachers and students of botany. The class membership is limited and applications must always be made in advance.

The house is open to visitors on Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday afternoons from 2 to 5 o'clock, excepting on holidays, from May to December, inclusive; the garden is open on afternoons through the summer from 2 to 5 o'clock. Admission fee.

#### SALEM PUBLIC LIBRARY

On this estate, 370 Essex street, formerly stood a house in which resided Miss Caroline Plummer, the donor of the several Plummer bequests. Capt. John Bertram purchased the estate after the decease of Miss Plummer, and erected a fine brick dwelling house upon it in 1855. Some years after his death, his heirs, December 1, 1887, offered the estate to the city for a public library building, and the offer was accepted. Scarcely any alterations were made in the exterior of the building, but the first, second and third

floors were entirely removed and rebuilt in a much stronger manner. The library was opened to the public for the delivery of books, July 8, 1889, and now contains 150,000 volumes. In 1911-12 a large addition was built in the rear, containing a fireproof stack room and new reference and work rooms. The building is surrounded by an ample lawn, on which formerly stood the "Bertram Elm," the finest American elm in this region, measuring 19 feet in circumference. Only the stump now remains. In the reading room is a painting by Clement R. Grant, entitled "A Witchcraft Accusation," the gift of Mrs. C. B. Kimball. The library is open



SALEM PUBLIC LIBRARY

week days for the delivery of books from 9 a.m. to 9 p.m. with the exception of July and August when it is open from 9 a.m. to 6 p.m. on Monday, Wednesday and Friday. The reading room is open

Monday, Wednesday and Friday from 9 a.m. to 9 p.m., and on Sundays and holidays from 2 p.m. to 6 p.m.

The South Branch Library, corner Lafayette street and Ocean avenue, a stucco building with colonial porch, was opened to the public April 12, 1913. The hours are from 1:30 to 5:30 and 7 to 9 p.m.

The North Branch Library, 2 Liberty Hill avenue, a modern brick building, erected in part with funds bequeathed to the city by David Pingree, was opened to the public May 17, 1934. The hours are from 1:30 to 5:30 and 7 to 9 p.m.

### THE SALEM ATHENÆUM

**The Athenæum**, 339 Essex street, was incorporated March 6, 1810. Its character and objects are in many respects like those of the Boston Athenæum. It was the outgrowth of the "Social Library" of 1760, and of the "Philosophical Library" of 1781, the nucleus of which was a collection of scientific books captured in the Irish Channel by Capt. Hugh Hill, one of George Cabot's privateersmen. An estate was purchased with money bequeathed for public uses to the proprietors of the Athenæum by Miss Caroline Plummer, who also established the Plummer Farm School and the Plummer Professorship of Christian Morals at Harvard College. The bequest was thirty thousand dollars, and the purpose of the gift was the purchase of a lot of land and the erection of a suitable building for the uses named. She directed that the gift should be recorded in the name of her brother, Ernestus Augustus Plummer. Accordingly a site now occupied by the museum building of the Essex Institute was purchased, and a hall was erected in 1857. (*See chapter on the Essex Institute, p. 79*). In 1906 the present building, known as Plummer Hall, was erected, the general appearance of the exterior having been suggested by "Home-wood," a Baltimore, Md., residence, built in 1804. The library of the Athenæum contains 30,000 volumes and the number of shareholders is one hundred, but a limited number of persons not pro-



THE SALEM ATHENÆUM

prietors may avail themselves of the privileges of the library by paying an annual subscription. The rooms are open from 9.30 a.m. to 5.30 p.m. daily, except Sundays and holidays. The officers are: President, Stephen Willard Phillips; clerk, Alfred Porter Putnam; treasurer, Peter S. Russell, Jr.

#### ESSEX COUNTY LAW LIBRARY

The library of the old Essex Bar Association probably was founded soon after its organization in 1831. In 1839, at the time of its removal from the old Washington Street Court House, it contained about four hundred volumes. Seventeen years after, when the present Bar Association was organized, in 1856, the law library was taken over, and it has steadily grown in size and importance since that time. It is located in the Superior Court building. It now contains over 45,000 volumes; is one of the best in the State, and one of the ten best in the United States. Open on week days from 9 a. m. to 4.30 p. m.; on Saturdays from 9 a. m. to 12 noon.

**Custom House**, 178 Derby street. (*See chapter on Hawthorne p. 70.*)

**Hospital**, Highland Avenue. The Salem Hospital was founded in 1873, by Capt. John Bertram. The hospital at first was a large brick building, 31 Charter street, formerly a private residence, the birthplace of the late Hon. Stephen H. Phillips, attorney-general of Massachusetts and of Hawaii. The present structure was erected in 1916-17, largely as a result of the great fire of 1914, which impaired the convenience of the Charter street quarters. A nurses' home was erected in 1927 near the hospital.

On the Charter street estate lived Capt. Richard More, the boy who came on the "Mayflower" with the Pilgrims to Plymouth in 1620.

**Jails.** The first jail stood westerly of the Daniel Low Company building, and when the court and town house was constructed in 1676, it was removed into what was then Benjamin Felton's garden, a few feet easterly from the corner of Essex and Washington streets, and was finally taken away in 1684, when the new jail was built on what is now Federal street.

**SITE OF THE WITCHCRAFT JAIL.** At 2 Federal street, corner of St. Peter, was built in 1684, the jail in which the persons accused of witchcraft in 1692 were confined, and from which the condemned were taken to the place of execution. In 1763 that jail was succeeded by a new one, on the site of what is now 4 Federal street. Upon the construction of the stone jail, in 1813, this building was remodeled into a dwelling house, which is now the residence of the family of the late Abner C. Goodell. It is said that some of the timbers of the jail of 1692 were used in the construction of the jail in 1763, and therefore are now existing in the present house.

**COUNTY JAIL AND HOUSE OF CORRECTION.** The present jail, a granite structure, is at the corner of St. Peter and Bridge streets. The original part was erected in 1813, and the extension, toward St. Peter street, in 1884-5. It is one of the most substantial and best designed jails in the state.

**Market.** A few steps eastward along Essex street from Town House Square bring the visitor to the open paved area on the right, known as the Market. This space extends from Essex to Front street, and at the time of the revolution it was the homestead of Col. William Browne, having been in the family for more than a century. Colonel Browne was a tory, holding the office of mandamus councillor, when, on August 24, 1774, he entertained Governor Gage and his civil and military staff, while Timothy Pickering, summoned by the sheriff into their presence, kept His Excellency so long in an "indecent passion," that the town meeting, which



THE MARKET-HOUSE AND MARKET SQUARE

the Governor had come to disperse, had transacted its business and adjourned without delay. Troops had been ordered up from the Neck, Town House Square was crowded with people, and bloodshed seemed imminent. Later, Colonel Browne's estate was confiscated, and in 1784 it was conveyed by the State to Elias Hasket Derby, the most successful merchant of the town. In 1797 Mr. Derby removed the residence of Colonel Browne, and erected upon its site, at a cost of eighty thousand dollars, the most sumptuous mansion ever built in Salem.\* It was occupied only a few months, and not long after Mr. Derby's decease was closed and offered for sale. No tenant or purchaser appeared for so costly an establishment, and the heirs conveyed it to the town to be used for a public market and meeting place forever. The grounds were finely terraced and beautifully laid out, but when the estate came into the possession of the town the mansion house was taken down and the land devoted to the purpose for which it had been given. The area was named Derby square, in honor of the former owner. A market house was erected at an expense of about twelve thousand dollars. The market, located on the first floor, was opened November 25, 1816, and had been leased for meat and provision stalls until recent years. The second story was finished as a hall, and always has been known as the Town Hall. Town meetings were held there until the incorporation of Salem as a city in 1836, and since that time it has been used for public gatherings. On Saturdays the carts of produce and provision dealers line the pavements in front of the Market House.

THE TOWN HALL was first opened to the public, July 8, 1817, on the occasion of the visit of President Monroe, who came from Marblehead to Salem on that day. He was magnificently received at the new Town Hall in the evening.

During 1934, the building was restored and the hall redecorated, and on April 7th of that year re-opening exercises were held

\* A picture of this house is in the second edition of Felt's *Annals of Salem*, and its plans, made by McIntire, are in the possession of the Essex Institute.—Advertisement of sale on Sept. 4, 1815 (Salem Gazette, Aug. 29, 1815).

with addresses by Leverett Saltonstall, great-grandson of the first mayor and James Duncan Phillips, grandson of the second mayor of Salem. The first floor was entirely transformed and fitted up for offices of various city departments.

**Pequot House**, next the Naumkeag Mills, and owned by the corporation, is a reproduction of a seventeenth century house. Free to the public.

**Pinkham Memorial**, 264 Derby street, was erected in 1922 by Mrs. Aroline C. Gove, in memory of her mother, Lydia E. Pinkham. It is used as a free baby clinic and by other health agencies.

**Police Station**, 17 Central street, was erected in 1913, John M. Gray, architect. Here is the office of the city marshal. The District Court room is on the second floor.

The court consists of a justice, two special justices and a clerk. Criminal sessions are held daily at 9 a. m., and civil sessions on Wednesdays at 10 a. m.

**Post Office**, Margin street, was erected by the Federal Government in 1932-33, on land which had been cleared of old and unsightly buildings. The architects were Smith and Walker of Salem and Boston. Besides the postal department, other Federal agencies occupy the building, including the deputy collector of the Port of Salem.

**Railroad Station** (Boston and Maine R. R.). This railroad originally the Eastern Railroad, a Salem enterprise, with its offices in Salem, was built from Boston to Salem in 1838, and was extended to Ipswich the next year upon the completion of the tunnel. This tunnel passes under Washington street, beginning directly in front of the station, and is six hundred and fifty feet long. The site occupied by the station was formerly the central dock of the South River, and the tide now ebbs and flows through a conduit. The original building was a small wooden structure, on which was hung an old convent bell captured at the siege of Port Royal. In the earlier times, for a few minutes before the departure of each train, the bell was rung by a veteran of the War of 1812. The

ticket office and waiting rooms were in an old red warehouse across the way. The present station was built from sketches made by Capt. D. A. Neal, the second president of the railroad, in the architectural style of a structure that attracted his attention in England. Gridley Bryant of Boston was the architect. It has two high granite towers, and a wide granite-arched entrance, which suggests the medieval gates of the older cities of Europe. It was erected in 1847, and, with the exception of the front, was rebuilt in 1882, the wooden portion of the structure having been destroyed by fire on the night of April 6 of that year.

**Schools.\*** BENTLEY SCHOOL, 50½ Essex street, a grammar and primary school for girls, was built of brick in 1861. The old East Church edifice stood between Hardy and Bentley streets, on Essex, just opposite the schoolhouse, and the bell from that meeting house, as the inscription upon it states, was cast by "Revere & Sons, Boston, 1801." and rings daily from the tower of the schoolhouse. The rooster that lifts its head above it was from the same meeting house.

PHILLIPS SCHOOL, 84 Essex street, a grammar school for girls and boys. The Phillips school was built with the salary paid Stephen C. Phillips when he was the second mayor of Salem and which he gave to the city.

HIGH SCHOOL. Upon a slight location, on Highland avenue, is the High School building, erected in 1909. Messrs. Kilham and Hopkins of Boston, were the architects. It accommodates over one thousand pupils. An addition to the building was made in 1927.

At the junction of Broad and Summer streets are several large brick buildings. The most western is the old High School building, erected in 1856, and remodeled in 1871. The building on the corner of Broad and Summer streets, formerly the State Normal School building, was built in 1854, and purchased by the city in 1897, having been used by the State for forty years as a Normal

\* There are fourteen primary and grammar schools in the city and four large parochial schools. See City Directory for detailed information.

School. These buildings are now used for school administration purposes, manual training school, and evening and vocational schools. The middle brick building on Broad street is the Oliver primary school, formerly the old Latin school. It was built in 1818 and is quite a gem architectually. Salem had a Latin School very early.

**FIRST BRICK SCHOOL HOUSE.** In 1760, a brick school house was built in the middle of Washington street, about opposite Church street. It was removed in 1785. Before it stood the whipping post. A picture of it may be seen at the Essex Institute.

**STATE TEACHERS' COLLEGE.** A State Normal School or Teachers' College has been located in Salem since 1854. Until 1896 it occupied the brick building at the corner of Summer and Broad streets. The new building, erected in 1893-1896, is at the junction of Lafayette street and Loring avenue. It covers a ground area of eleven thousand square feet. Facing northward, it is one hundred and eighty feet in length from east to west, and has two wings, each one hundred and forty feet from north to south. It stands so high and is so large that it fairly dominates the southern section of the city. The architect was J. Philip Rinn of Boston, and the cost was two hundred thousand dollars. On Loring avenue is the Training School building, having kindergarten, primary and grammar grades, and providing instruction for nearly five hundred pupils from among the children of the neighborhood. These training schools are public schools and under the control of the school committee of Salem. In the second story is a hall, 60 by 80 feet. The school is supplied with a fine scientific apparatus, including a telescope of fair power and a library of four thousand volumes. There is a small tuition fee to residents of the state who intend to become teachers in its public schools. In the various halls there are portraits, busts and statues, and among the mural decorations are reliefs from the Parthenon frieze, the frieze of the prophets, by John S. Sargent, and other works of art.

**Town House.** See Court Houses, p. 136.

## HALLS AND THEATRES

**Ames Memorial Hall**, 288 Essex street, in the Y. M. C. A. building, was erected in 1898, a memorial to George L. Ames, a benefactor of the association. It seats 800 persons, and is principally used for concerts and lectures.

**Empire Theatre**, 285½ Essex street, built in 1906, seats nearly 1500. On this site formerly stood a house in which Dec. 16, 1751, was born George Cabot, the distinguished Federalist and president of the Hartford Convention. This was also the site of Mechanic Hall, erected of brick in 1839, and destroyed by fire Feb. 4, 1905. For over half a century it was the principal hall in the city for theatricals, having a seating capacity of about eleven hundred. In it, from time to time, occurred many of the most notable gatherings, political and social, in Salem.

**Hamilton Hall**, Chestnut street, designed by Samuel McIntire and owned by the South Building Corporation. It was built in 1805 and named in honor of Alexander Hamilton, who had visited Salem, where he had many of his warmest admirers. This hall has since been the center of Salem's social activity, and in it have been held the assemblies and many notable anniversary dinners and celebrations. Pickering was entertained at a dinner in this hall in 1808; Bainbridge in 1813 and Lafayette, Aug. 31, 1824.

**Academy Hall**, 157 Essex street, was built in 1885, opened Feb. 12, 1886 and demolished in 1940, as a part of the Peabody Museum, when East India Marine Hall was restored and renovated. Academy Hall had a seating capacity of 350 and was one of the finest lecture and concert rooms in the state. Many well-known lecturers have addressed gatherings from its stage.

**Now and Then Hall**, 102 Essex street, connected with the club house of the Association, seats about 900 persons.

**Paramount Theatre**, 180 Essex street, was built in 1929 as a motion picture house. It seats 2,187 persons.

**Washington Hall** was in the upper or third story of the Stearns

block, 101 Washington street, which was erected in 1792, on the site of the Widow Pratt's famous tavern of many gables. It was opened Feb. 22, 1793, the birthday of Washington, which marked his second assumption of the presidency, with a grand dinner, an oration by Bentley, and great rejoicings at the French Revolution, then just announced. It was a curious survival of the antique assembly room, with fireplaces, wooden wainscoting, and music gallery. The balcony rail of this music gallery is now preserved in the museum of the Essex Institute. This quaint hall was, for a number of years after it was opened, a popular place for parties and other gatherings, and later it became a theatre, reached by a single, narrow, crooked staircase, a condition, which no fire inspector of today would sanction. It is now gone, and a new building has been erected upon the site.

**E. M. Loew Salem Theatre**, 293 Essex street, was built in 1952 as a motion picture house. It is air-conditioned and has the largest screen on the North Shore. Seating capacity about 1,000 persons.

**Plaza Theatre**, 273 Essex street. Opened Dec. 31, 1913; rebuilt after a disastrous fire in 1917. Seating capacity 770.

#### BUILDINGS, SITES, MONUMENTS, ETC.

**Andrew-Safford House**, 13 Washington Square, West, was erected by John Andrew in 1818, was a favorite visiting place of Gov. John Albion Andrew in his youth. John Andrew was the Governor's uncle. It was spoken of at the time of its completion as the most costly private residence in New England, and is a fine specimen of the architecture of the early portion of the last century. It is now the property of the Essex Institute.

**Assembly Hall**, 138 Federal street, was built in 1782, and from that date until 1795 was a famous Assembly House. Here Lafayette was entertained Oct. 29, 1784, and Washington, Oct. 29, 1789, and oratorios, concerts, balls, plays and dances were of frequent occurrence. It has been a private dwelling house since that time, and Judge Samuel Putnam was among those who lived there.

**Bakery Old**, *see* House of the Seven Gables, in the chapter on Hawthorne, p. 65.

**Bandstand**, on Salem Common, a memorial to the soldiers of all wars, was erected in 1926, and dedicated during the tercentenary celebration. The top is surmounted by a pineapple, the symbol of hospitality. The architects were Smith and Walker, of Boston.

**Beadle's Tavern, Site of**, 65 Essex street. This inn, kept by Thomas Beadle, was flourishing in the witchcraft times.

**Becket House**, *see* House of the Seven Gables in the chapter on Hawthorne, p. 65.

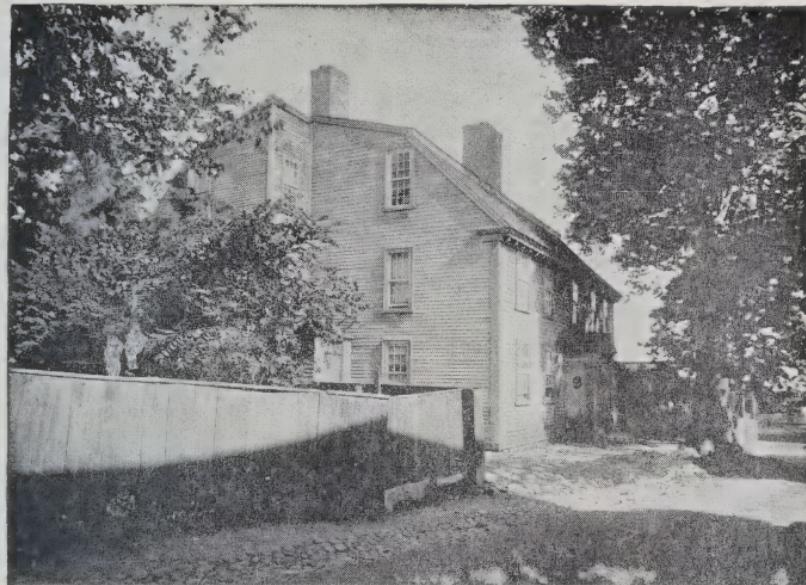
**Bishop House, Site of**. Edward Bishop and his wife, Bridget, who was hanged for witchcraft in 1692, lived in a house that stood on the southern corner of Church and Washington streets. It was here that the "puppets" were said to have been found. Upham, the chronicler of witchcraft, once lived there.

**Boardman House**, 82 Washington Square, East, which still preserves its original appearance, attracted the attention of Washington when visiting Salem in 1789, by the beauty of its architectural proportions. It was then new, and had been offered for his use.

**Cabot House**, 365 Essex street. This old-time mansion was built by Joseph Cabot in 1748; and for thirty years was the residence of Hon. William Crowninshield Endicott, Justice of the Supreme Judicial Court, and Secretary of War under President Cleveland. Judge Endicott here entertained, 1890, Gen. William T. Sherman; also Rt. Hon. Joseph Chamberlain of England, his son-in-law and the latter's son Sir Austen Chamberlain.

It is now owned by Mrs. George S. Parker.

**Cook-Oliver House**, 142 Federal street. This house, where Gen. Henry Kemble Oliver married, lived at times, and died, was built by Capt. Samuel Cook, his father-in-law, while the demolition of the Derby mansion, in Derby square, was in progress. Much of the beautiful McIntire finish of that costly structure was built



MILES WARD AND RICHARD DERBY HOUSE,  
SHOWING GAMBREL ROOF  
CABOT AND JUDGE ENDICOTT HOUSE, SHOWING GAMBREL ROOF

into this house, constituting some of the best specimens of McIntire's work now existing.

**Crowninshield's Wharf.** Near Becket street is Crowninshield's, or India Wharf, later owned by Stephen C. Phillips and now owned by the Wilkesbarre Coal Company, where the bodies of Captain Lawrence and Lieutenant Ludlow of the *Chesapeake* were brought, and whence their funeral procession moved, Aug. 23, 1813. The disastrous battle between the *Chesapeake* and the *Shannon*, on June 1, 1813, was fought so near the shore that it was witnessed from the higher hills of Salem.

**Derby Wharf**, which extends nearly 2,000 feet into Salem Harbor, is one of the most important survivals from the great days of Salem shipping. It was begun by Capt. Richard Derby soon after 1762 and during the Revolution was used by his son, Elias Hasket Derby, as a base for fitting out privateers. After the war, the wharf became one of the great mercantile centers of the young republic, as Elias Hasket Derby took the lead among American merchants in developing an extensive trade with Europe, the East Indies and China.

**The Derby House**, now the oldest brick dwelling in Salem, was erected in 1761-1762, by Capt. Richard Derby for his son, Elias Hasket Derby. The latter, who was married in 1761, occupied the house until the early days of the Revolutionary War. A later resident was Capt. Henry Prince, a master in the Derby fleet, who, in 1796, sailed to Manila on the first voyage made to the Philippines by an American vessel. Some interior restoration of this historic structure has been necessary. Visitors will find the original paint colors of the various rooms and the ornate staircase in the front hall of unusual interest. Among the furnishings are objects associated with the Derbys, including some family portraits. Here lived his son, Capt. John Derby, whose rare fortune it was to take the news of Lexington to London in advance of the government in 1775, and at the close of the war in 1783, to bring home from Paris in the ship "Astrea," the first news of peace. This house was the pro-

perty of the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities and was turned over to the Salem Maritime National Historic Site, which is a part of the National Park Service, in 1938, as a part of the Derby Wharf project.

**The Rum Shop**, a building probably erected soon after 1800, stands on the corner east of the Derby House. The Hawkes House, just west of the Derby House, was originally designed about 1780 by Samuel McIntire, Salem's great architect, as a sumptuous mansion for Elias Hasket Derby. Capt. Benjamin Hawkes, a ship-builder and merchant, bought the structure in 1801 and completed it in its present form.

Extending into the harbor, parallel to and west of Derby Wharf, but only one-third as long, is Central Wharf, first constructed in 1791-1792 by Simon Forrester, captain of a Derby privateer in the Revolution and subsequently a prominent merchant.

**Essex Bridge**, which connects Salem and Beverly, is at the eastern end of Bridge street. It was built in 1788, and was regarded in its day as a triumph of engineering skill. It was praised by Brissot de Warville, who crossed it when just completed, and who returned to France to die by the guillotine in 1793; and also by Washington, who crossed it in 1789. By the draw, which was lifted by man-power, like two huge trapdoors, was the old seat described by Hawthorne in his story, "The Toll-Gatherer's Day." (*See chapter on Hawthorne*, p. 75.)

The piers of the bridge have long been a favorite place for collecting the invertebrates living in salt water. Here, at exceptionally low tides, there is a good opportunity for securing and studying the curious sea-anemones, star-fishes, sea-urchins, hydroids, sponges, and many small mollusks, and the remains of the old ferry landing may still be seen.

On the other side, at the edge of the water, is the trap dike made famous by Hitchcock in his report on the Geology of Massachusetts, in 1841. Within the area of a square rod eleven different eruptions of granite and trap rock may be found.

**Fort, Site of Ancient.** The fort built by the early settlers as a defence against Indian attacks, was at a point now the western corner of Sewall and Lynde streets. It was the highest ground in that portion of the city, and was the property of Samuel Sharp, the gunner, who lived on the spot.

**Gallows Hill.** This is the place of execution of the nineteen persons condemned for witchcraft in 1692. Here, at a spot formerly overlooking the water, the victims were hanged on trees.

**Essex House.** The site of the Essex House, 176½ Essex street, (*see page 1*) was the home of Peter Palfry, one of the Old Planters, before 1651. It was afterwards the homestead of Hon. William Browne, one of the council of Sir Edmond Andros, and in this fine house William Goodhue conducted a tavern for many years at the close of the Revolution. He subsequently leased the house to Samuel Robinson and Captain Benjamin Webb, successively, for the same purpose. The latter was an innkeeper there in 1793, conducting the most noted tavern in Salem. It was then known as the Sun Tavern. Captain Webb continued the business until the estate was sold to William Gray, Jr., of Salem, the celebrated merchant. "Billy Gray," who took the old house down to build his fine brick mansion, and the old Sun Tavern, which flourished there, was removed to the Brown house, vacated by Mr. Gray. He was born in Lynn in 1750, and came to Salem at an early age, becoming one of the greatest merchants and ship-owners in the country. His counting room, primitive in the extreme, was interesting in comparison with the offices of merchants of the present day, and the very limited draft of water at his wharves would stagger the modern navigator. It was in the warehouse numbered 311 Derby street, destroyed in the great fire of 1914, that he conned his ledgers. He was lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts in 1810-11, and died in Boston in 1825. At the close of the Revolution in 1783, when several "absentee" estates were in the market, William Gray bought at public vendue the property on Essex street where the Bowker Block now stands, confiscated on account of the course

taken by Col. William Browne. It was a large and stately mansion standing eighteen feet back from the street. Here Mr. Gray lived until he bought the Sun Tavern, and on its site erected the magnificent mansion house to which he removed about 1800, and, in 1809, when Mr. Gray left Salem, this became the Essex House. His former residence, the stately Browne mansion of 1665, from which was saved the rough-cast ornament shown in the museum of the Institute, and minutely described by Hawthorne in "The House of the Seven Gables," became, in 1805, the Sun Tavern, which continued until 1828, when the building was removed and parts of it still survive, scattered about the town. It was also known for a long time among some of the old residents as the Essex Coffee House. When Lafayette slept there, in 1824, after a most dramatic welcome to Salem by Judge Story, the house was called the



HOTEL HAWTHORNE

Lafayette Coffee House, in his honor, but only for a short time. A fine old fireplace and mantel were in the office, and a pictorial paper, representing scenes in the French Revolution, covered the walls of the eastern parlor.

Kossuth, the Hungarian patriot, was entertained here, May 6, 1852, and General McClellan was tendered a public reception here on the morning of Feb. 5, 1863. The Essex House of that time

stood some forty feet from the street, with a paved courtyard for stage-coaches in front. In 1896 the property was built out to the street line and the hotel remodelled. In 1915 the hotel was nearly destroyed by fire and again remodelled.

**Hotel Hawthorne.** This new hostelry, erected in 1925, at a cost of \$750,000, raised by popular subscription in Salem and vicinity, occupies the site of the Franklin building, corner Essex street and Washington square, which was owned by the Salem Marine Society whose headquarters are on the roof.

**The Marine Society Bethel**, formerly situated on the water's edge, in what was the garden of the "House of the Seven Gables," now stands on the northern side of the "Gables," where it has been remodeled and is known as "Turner Hall," used for entertainments in settlement work. It was built in 1890 with funds bequeathed by Capt. Henry Barr.

**Narbonne House**, 71 Essex street, was built before 1671, and



NARBONNE HOUSE, SHOWING LEAN-TO ROOF AND CENT SHOP

is one of the best examples of houses of that period, showing lean-to roof and corner shop.

**North Bridge.** The original bridge where Col. Leslie's retreat took place was at water level which is now changed in appearance by the new overpass which forms a section of the "cloverleaf" recently installed as a part of the state highway program. The original memorial tablet of bronze inserted in an upright granite block has been placed in the site of the present overpass where it may be easily seen. The tablet was placed at the old North bridge in 1887 and bears the following inscription:

IN THE REVOLUTION THE FIRST ARMED RESISTANCE TO THE ROYAL AUTHORITY WAS MADE AT THIS BRIDGE 26 FEB. 1775 BY THE PEOPLE OF SALEM. THE ADVANCE OF 300 BRITISH TROOPS, LED BY LT. COL. LESLIE AND SENT BY GEN. GAGE TO SEIZE MUNITIONS OF WAR WAS HERE ARRESTED.

The story of the armed resistance which preceded the American Revolution is one of the most interesting that has been handed down and the date is further memorialized in organization of Old Salem Chapter, Sons of the American Revolution:

"Here at the North bridge on Sunday afternoon, Feb. 26, 1775, the townspeople assembled and checked the further advance of Colonel Leslie and the 64th Regiment of the King's regulars, who had landed at Marblehead and marched to Salem in search of cannon believed to be concealed in the "North Fields."

The British marched directly to the North Bridge, Colonel Leslie being no stranger to the locality, for during the preceding summer he had frequented the neighborhood. Capt. John Felt, who lived on Lynde street, in the house now removed to 47 Federal street, and others who were present, warned the colonel that he could not proceed,—that he was marching, not on the King's highway, but in a private lane,—that the bridge was private property, and that, as martial law had not been declared, he would advance at his peril.

Religious services were in progress in the North Church, which then stood on the southern corner of North and Lynde streets,

when Capt. David Mason shouted the alarm, Maj. John Pedrick of Marblehead having ridden "across lots" with the intelligence in advance of the Regulars. Parson Thomas Barnard dismissed his congregation and hastened to the bridge in the role of peacemaker. The draw had already been raised, and Capt. James Barr, who lived



PICKMAN HOUSE

at 25 Lynde street, had scuttled his "gundalow," which was lying at the wharf nearby. During the discussion which ensued, the guns were removed to a place of safety. The concourse of citizens rapidly increased, and late in the afternoon Colonel Leslie agreed that if the draw should be lowered he would march but a few rods beyond, abandon the search, and withdraw his regiment. The terms were accepted and observed, and the regiment returned to Marblehead and re-embarked for Boston.

General Gage reported to his government that he had been misled and that the guns did not exist. The cannon in question were ship's guns, loaned to the Province by Richard Derby, and were being mounted as field artillery in the blacksmith shop of Robert Foster, who lived at 88 North street, and whose shop was across the way from his house. This was the first opposition to the military authority of Great Britain. It occurred two months before Lexington and Concord, and four months before Bunker Hill, and if the British troops succeeded in their objects at these points, it may be said that they failed at Salem. (*See J. D. Phillips' "Salem in the 18th Century" pp. 350-360.*)

**Peirce-Nichols House**, 80 Federal street, erected in 1782. Now the property of the Essex Institute. Open Tuesdays thru Saturdays from 2-5 p.m. Admission fee. (*See chapter on Essex Institute, p. 106.*)

**Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse Estate** was on the southern corner of Washington and Lynde streets, now occupied by the Masonic Temple, erected in 1915-16. It was built in 1764 by Col. Benjamin Pickman, a wealthy merchant for the residence of his son Clarke Gayton Pickman. Later it became the Derby mansion. (*See chapter on Salem Architecture, p. 47.*)

**Pingree House**, 128 Essex street, erected in 1805. Now the property of the Essex Institute. Open daily except Sunday, and holidays, from 9-11:15 a.m. and 2-4:15 p.m. Admission fee. (*See chapter on Essex Institute, p. 102.*)

**Pickering House**, 18 Broad street. This ancient edifice of many gables was built in 1660 by John Pickering and has been in the Pickering family ever since. It was remodeled in 1841 when the present "peaked windows" and exterior finish were added. The house is open to the public by appointment. Admission fee. (*See chapter on Salem Architecture, p. 43.*)

**"Pineapple Doorway,"** (*See chapter on Essex Institute, p. 96.*)

**Prison Ship.** During the War of 1812-15, a large prison ship, filled with British prisoners of war, was anchored in the North River, opposite the foot of Rust street.

**Ruck House**, formerly at 8 Mill street, was built by Thomas Ruck before 1651. When the site on which it stood was taken in 1933 as part of the land to be occupied by the new United States Post Office, the Ruck house was purchased by a group of citizens, removed to Forest River Park, and later temporarily set up there, until it could be decided how it should be permanently set up as the oldest house of record in the City of Salem. The oldest portion was the northwest corner, where the great chimney stood, and it remained in the Ruck family until 1751, when the old part was conveyed to Joseph McIntire, joiner, father of Samuel McIntire, the famous architect. Mr. McIntire, sold the old part to Samuel Bacon, who owned the new part, in 1754. While the latter owned the house it was occupied, in 1766 and 1767, by Richard Cranch, a watchmaker and local justice. Mr. Cranch and the young lawyer, John Adams, afterwards President of the United States, married sisters; and when riding the eastern circuit, Adams passed through Salem often, stopping with "brother" Cranch. In speaking of the house, he wrote in his journal, while visiting there, Nov. 3, 1766: "Cranch is now in a good situation for business, near the Court House. . . . his house, fronting on the wharves, the harbor and the shipping, has a fine prospect before it." Cranch's son, William, became, in 1805, Justice Cranch of the United States Supreme Court. Mr. Cranch removed to Boston in 1767, and was succeeded as a tenant of this house by John Singleton Copley, the celebrated artist, who remained here a considerable time, painting portraits of leading citizens. The family sailed from Marblehead for England in 1775, being in sympathy with the Crown. This was the house of Rev. Samuel Worcester, pastor of the Tabernacle Church from 1809 until his decease in 1821; and of Rev. Thomas Carlile, rector of St. Peter's in 1822. Since that time it had been in the possession of the family of Ephraim Brown, the rear portion of it being known in former times as Brown's bakery.

**Ship Rock.** The largest and most noted of the boulders of Essex County is Ship Rock, in Peabody, which is owned by the

Essex Institute. It is composed of hornblende granite, and measured forty-five feet in length and twenty-two feet in height. It stands upon the brow of a steep hill, on a ledge which is about one hundred feet above sea level. Ship Rock was so called as early as 1708. It was conveyed to the Essex County Historical Society in 1847, which united with the Essex County Natural History Society the next year to form the Essex Institute. An iron ladder enables the visitor to go readily to the top, from which an extended view of the sea is obtained. Some say that the name was derived from its resemblance to a ship; another tradition is that it was used by pirates to watch the movements of vessels along the shore. (*See report of Russell Leigh Jackson, director, to the Council of the Essex Institute on Ship Rock in vol. 86, pg. 288-91 of the Essex Institute Historical Collections*).

**Ship Tavern, Site of.** Opposite Central street stood the residence of John Gedney before 1660. He maintained a tavern here and in a chamber of the ancient house the quarterly courts were held for many years. The house was known as "Ship Tavern," and was taken down in 1748. A fine house called the "King's Arms" was built upon the site and the business continued. President Jackson visited Salem, June 26, 1833, and passed the night in this house, which was placed at his disposal by its owner, Capt. Nathaniel West. Later it became the "Mansion House," and was burnt in 1859.

**Shipyard of the Becketts.** At the foot of Becket street was the shipyard of the Becket family, who built vessels here from 1755 to 1800, and later in a yard beyond. The privateer *America*, the famous ships *Mount Vernon*, *Recovery*, and *Margaret*, and the celebrated yacht *Cleopatra's Barge*, were built here.

**John Ward House, (See chapter on Essex Institute, p. 109.)**

**Joshua Ward House**, 148 Washington street. The ancient structure that originally stood on the site of this house was the residence of Sheriff George Corwin, who, in 1692, at the age of twenty-six, executed the persons condemned for witchcraft. He

died here four years later, and it is said that the public feeling against him was then so bitter that the family dared not trust his remains in the tomb at the rear of the house, but deposited them for a time in the cellar of the house. The main portion of the present brick house was built in 1781, for his residence, by the merchant, Joshua Ward. Washington passed the night of Oct. 29, 1789, in the northeast chamber, second floor, of this house when on his tour of New England, and Chief Justice Lemuel Shaw frequented this house when in Salem on court business. In the Institute museum is a table that was used by Washington during his brief stop at this house.

**Miles Ward House.** The residence of Miles Ward, built about 1740, now much remodeled, stands on the eastern corner of Herbert and Derby streets. Richard Derby, father of Elias Hasket Derby lived here all of his active life. During his life in the Manning house on Herbert street, Nathaniel Hawthorne was very intimate with the family living in this house. (*See Chapter on Hawthorne, p. 54.*)

**Waters House**, 114 Derby street, was built in 1806-7, for Capt. Joseph Waters, marine architect of the frigate "Essex." It was used for many years as the Bertram Home for Aged Men, until the purchase of the Peabody house on Washington Square.

**Naval Reserve Training Center.** Stands on Central wharf, built originally as Forrester's wharf in 1791-2 by Simon Forrester, who had been a privateering captain for the Derbys during the Revolution. The Forrester family erected before 1832 the brick warehouse, the remains of which now show between the Naval Reserve Training Center and Derby street. The Training Center was dedicated on June 21, 1948 with ceremonies at which Rear Admiral Morton L. Deyo, USN was a guest and principal speaker. Other addresses were given by Mayor Joseph B. Harrington, Cong. George J. Bates, and James Duncan Phillips. Lt. Commander Lawrence H. McGovern, USNR was the officer in charge of the Center.

**The Coast Guard Air Station.** Commissioned on 15 February 1935. Prior to this, the air station had been located at Ten Pound Island in Gloucester Harbor. The Salem Air Station was the second air station commissioned in the Coast Guard.

The primary duty of Coast Guard Aviation at that time was to assist the surface units of the Coast Guard wherever possible. At this time, the Coast Guard was not charged with search and rescue operations as it is known as today.

In November, 1941 the Coast Guard Air Station operational control was changed from Commander First Coast Guard District to Commander, Inshore Patrol Force, First Naval District. In June 1942, the operational control was changed to Commander, Northern Air Patrol, Northern Group, Eastern Sea Frontier.

## MONUMENTS



CHOATE MONUMENT

**Joseph Hodges Choate Monument.** At the extreme western end of Essex street, near the corner of Boston street, is the monument erected in 1923 to the memory of this most distinguished son of Salem, the gift of Henry Clay Frick to the city. The sculptor was J. Massey Rhind, who, by his art, shows patriotism personified, extending to the eminent jurist the crown of bay.

**Roger Conant Statue.** Upon a huge boulder, brought from the woods near the Floating Bridge and placed near the East Church,

stands the heroic bronze figure of Roger Conant, the leader of the first settlement at Naumkeag, now Salem, in 1626. The statue was designed by Henry H. Kitson for the Conant Family Association, and dedicated June 17, 1913.

**Father Mathew Statue.** At the southern end of Hawthorne Boulevard is the statue of Rev. Theobald Mathew, the apostle of temperance, who visited Salem, Sept. 19, 1849. The statue first was erected in 1887, on Central street, over a spring, which furnished drinking water for the inhabitants of the section. It was removed to its present location in 1916.



HAWTHORNE MONUMENT

**23rd Regiment Boulder** stands at the head of Winter street. This granite boulder weighs about 58 tons and was brought from Salem Neck in 1905. It commemorates the service of the 23d Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry in the Civil War. The bronze tablet also records the names of thirteen engagements in which the regiment took part, and the corps-badge of the 18th Army Corps, in bronze, also is attached to the boulder. The cannon within the enclosure formerly were in front of the old Cadet Armory.

**Hawthorne Monument.** Erected at Hawthorne Boulevard in 1925, from funds raised by the Nathaniel Hawthorne Memorial Association, the statue was unveiled on December 23rd of that year by Miss Rosamond Mikkelsen, a great-granddaughter of the writer, following a program held at the Second church at which Judge Alden Perley White was the speaker. The sculptor was Bela Lyon Pratt.

## CHAPTER IX

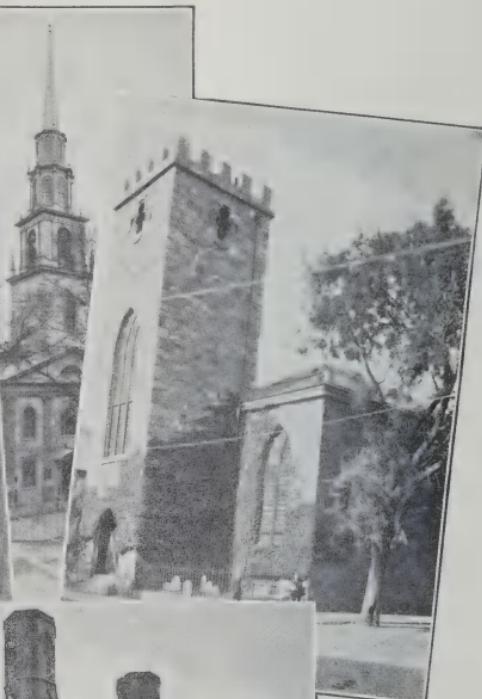
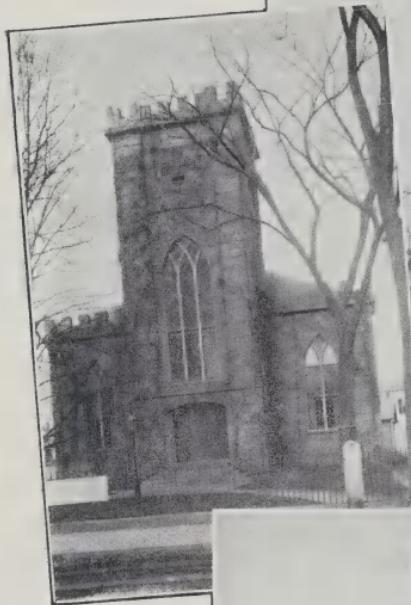
### CHURCHES

**North Salem Community Church** (Fundamental), 127 North street. The Society was organized in 1875 as the Advent Christian church and the church building was erected in 1890. In 1944 the name of the Society was changed to the North Salem Community Church.

**Calvary Baptist Church**, formerly stood at the corner of Chestnut and Cambridge streets, but was demolished in 1952, the church society having united with the First Baptist church in September, 1950. The Calvary Baptist church was formed in 1870 and their house of worship was at the corner of Essex and Herbert streets, and later the wooden building at the corner of Bridge and Lemon streets. In the Assembly House formerly on this site on Cambridge street, were held the assemblies and large social gatherings before the Revolution—the famous ball given by Governor Bernard's son in 1768 and the official receptions tendered to Governor Hutchinson on his last military review in Massachusetts and to Governor Gage on the last king's birthday celebrated in Massachusetts. It was followed by the very beautiful South Congregational church designed by McIntire which dominated Chestnut street till destroyed by fire.

**First Baptist Church**, 56 Federal street, was organized in 1804 and erected its meeting house in 1806, which was remodeled in 1868. In 1950, the Calvary Baptist church united with the First Baptist church.

**French Evangelical (Baptist) Church**, corner Lyme and Canal streets was built in 1913. The following year, on the very day following the outbreak of the great fire, it became, for a while, a refuge as well as a clothing distributing center. A family lived in the vestry of the church until it found lodging elsewhere. The pastor serving the church now has thus far served the church as



FIRST CHURCH

SOUTH CHURCH

Burned in 1903

SECOND CHURCH

ST. PETER'S CHURCH

pastor for 49 years, having come to Salem as a missionary in 1903.

**Crombie Street Church** (Congregational), 7 Crombie street, is an offshoot from the once flourishing Howard Street, or Branch Church. Rufus Choate was on its first board of trustees. The plain brick building was erected in 1828 for a theatre. As such, it had a short-lived success, and the building was dedicated to church purposes Nov. 22, 1832. In 1892 extensive repairs and alterations were made and several memorial windows added. A serious fire occurred here on Feb. 5, 1934. The church building was rebuilt and dedicated on April 21, 1935.

**First Church** (Unitarian). The First Church, which was located for nearly three hundred years at the corner of Essex and Washington streets, united with the North Church in 1923, the North Society giving up its organization. The First Society moved to the edifice of the North Society, thus reuniting two of the oldest churches of the city. The present location of the First Church is in the stone edifice at 316 Essex street. Originally Trinitarian Congregational, now Unitarian, the church was formed in the summer of 1629, being the first Congregational society organized in America. The meeting-house, built before 1635, was enlarged in 1639; the original contract, in Governor Endecott's handwriting, for this enlargement, is a part of the town records and may be seen in the office of the City Clerk, at City Hall. It bears the signatures of Governor Endecott, Roger Conant, William Hathorne, John Woodbury and Lawrence Leach, and of John Pickering, the contractor. The second meeting-house was erected in 1671, the third in 1718, and the fourth, built of brick, in 1826. This was remodeled in 1875. The main entrance was on Essex street, and at its side a bronze tablet placed by the city on the outer wall, is inscribed as follows:

HERE STOOD FROM 1634 UNTIL 1673 THE FIRST MEETING HOUSE  
ERECTED IN SALEM. NO STRUCTURE WAS BUILT EARLIER FOR CON-  
GREGATIONAL WORSHIP BY A CHURCH FORMED IN AMERICA. IT WAS  
OCCUPIED FOR SECULAR AS WELL AS RELIGIOUS USES. IN IT

PREACHED IN SUCCESSION, I. ROGER WILLIAMS; II. HUGH PETER; III. EDWARD NORRIS; IV. JOHN HIGGINSON. IT WAS ENLARGED IN 1639 AND WAS LAST USED FOR WORSHIP IN 1670. THE FIRST CHURCH IN SALEM, GATHERED JULY AND AUGUST, 1629, HAS HAD NO PLACE OF WORSHIP BUT THIS SPOT.

A supplementary tablet, bearing the following inscription, has been placed on the building formerly occupied by the First church, now by Daniel Low's:

"THE FIRST CHURCH IN SALEM OCCUPIED THIS SPOT FROM 1634 UNTIL 1923 AND THIS BUILDING WAS ITS FOURTH MEETING HOUSE. UPON THE UNION OF THE FIRST AND NORTH CHURCHES THE SOCIETY HAS MET FOR WORSHIP IN THE NORTH MEETING HOUSE THEREAFTER KNOWN AS THE FIRST CHURCH."

Before 1870 this society was using an organ inscribed in large letters on two plates upon its front, "John Avery, London, Fecit, 1800." This was considered a fine organ. The society possesses many interesting relics, including the original early records and several pieces of old silver long used in the communion service, two of them from the hand of Paul Revere, but unfortunately several of the oldest and most interesting were melted down in 1815 and made into a basin. Among those now preserved are five cups, the gift of William Browne about 1700, a cup from Sarah Higginson in 1720, one from Mary Walcott in 1729, and a flagon from Samuel Browne in 1731.

The meeting house of the North Church Society, which was formed by a separation from the First Church in 1772, was originally located on the southern corner of Lynde and North streets. The present granite edifice occupied by the combined organizations, and now known as the First Church, was built in 1835, Gridley J. F. Bryant being the architect. Some interior ornamentation was added in 1848. It is after the style of an old English parish church, and the excellent Gothic interior finish and high-backed pews are well in keeping. The church was built largely under the supervision of the late Francis Peabody, whose love of the beautiful in architecture has left a good influence in Salem

in many ways. On the walls are tablets to the memory of Thomas Barnard, John Emery Abbott, John Brazer, and Edmund B. Willson, ministers of the church, and Judge Lincoln F. Brigham, and, in the minister's room, a memorial gift of Edward H. Payson, is another tablet inscribed to the memory of the donor's wife. A stained glass window by John LaFarge of New York, was placed in the church in 1892. It is inscribed: "In memory of Francis and Martha Peabody: By their children," and shows full-length figures of Faith and Charity. Another window was added in 1894, the work of the Tiffanys of New York, consecrated to the memory of Martha Buttrick Willson, the wife of a former pastor. Also a memorial window given by Mrs. Emery W. Johnson, the work of the Tiffanys. The present organ was installed in 1882. The old organ was removed, leaving the present one in front. The organ contained 26 speaking stops. Two stops, a Vox Humana and Doppel Flute, also a set of chimes were given by Mrs. Francis H. Lee. In 1926 a choir organ was added, a gift of Mrs. David M. Little in memory of David Mason Little. In 1927, extensive repairs and additions were made to the Vestry, giving much needed space for the various organizations connected with the church.

**First Church of Christ Scientist**, 16 Lynde street. This society was organized in 1896, and in 1911 dedicated its present building which originally was the parish house of the First Church.

**First Spiritualist Society**, 34 Warren street. This was formerly the Friends' meeting house, built in 1916 to replace the building destroyed in the great fire of 1914. Purchased by the Spiritualist Society in 1927.

**The Friends.** Between the sites of the houses numbered 375 and 377 Essex street stood the first meeting-house of the Salem Society of Friends. They held services in Salem as early as 1675, but their meeting-house was not erected until 1688. It was built by the famous Quaker, Thomas Maule, upon his own land. He deeded the building and land to the Friends in 1690, and, in 1718, when they erected a new meeting-house, they reconveyed the old house and land to him. It then became a part of a dwelling-house.

The original frame is now preserved by the Essex Institute in the rear of its Museum building and now houses the Vaughan doll and toy collection. The second meeting-house of this society was built in 1718, where the Friends' cemetery may now be found, at 396½ Essex street.

**Grace Church** (Episcopal), 381 Essex street, was organized in 1858. The first building erected in that year was taken down in 1926 and a stone structure erected on the same site, completed in 1927, Smith and Walker, architects. This building contains a memorial to the late rector, the Rev. James P. Franks, in the shape of a sanctuary entirely erected in his honor. The floor is of marble imported from Italy. The altar is also of marble. The reredos, rail, and furniture are all of English oak, carved in this country. Several windows of stained glass, representing different periods, are worthy of note. It contains a beautiful pulpit of carved oak, a fine example of church architecture, which bears on a silver plate the following inscription: "Presented to Grace Church in memory of John Bertram, by his daughters, J. M. E. and A. B. W., December, 1883." The oak for this pulpit was brought from the Isle of Jersey, the birthplace of Captain Bertram. On the east wall of the chancel is a fine stained-glass window contributed, in 1892, by devoted friends, in memory of Mrs. James P. Franks, the widely-esteemed wife of the then rector. The window was designed by Henry Holiday, R. A., of London, and its beauty gains an additional interest from the fact that it was selected by the late Bishop Phillips Brooks while visiting London. There is, also, a beautiful marble tablet to the memory of Dr. John Francis Tuckerman, for many years a vestryman of this church, and director of its music. The organ was built by the Hook-Hastings Company. A beautiful stone parish house, in memory of Miss Madeline Abbot, was erected in 1929-30. This connects with the church building and also with Grace House, which was used previously as a parish house.

**Howard Street or Branch Church**, formerly located where the Prescott schoolhouse now stands. This society was organized

Dec. 29, 1803, and erected its meeting-house in 1805. In the war of 1812-15, the disastrous naval battle between the *Chesapeake* and the *Shannon* was fought on June 1, 1813, so near shore that it was witnessed by many from the higher hills and church spires of Salem and its neighborhood. On the twenty-third of August, the remains of Captain Lawrence and Lieutenant Ludlow of the *Chesapeake*, who were killed in the engagement, were brought from Halifax to Salem by a crew of shipmasters, and landed at India (now Phillips) wharf, and thence to this church, where the funeral was held with great pomp, and Judge Story delivered an eulogy that became famous. Their bodies were temporarily placed in the tomb of Capt. George Crowninshield in the Howard Street cemetery. Two churches in Salem had refused the use of their houses, so high ran party feeling. Here, too, preached George B. Cheever, afterwards of New York, and Charles T. Torrey, who died from brutal treatment in a Baltimore jail, where he was confined for aiding the escape of slaves. Four hundred negroes owed their freedom to his efforts, and Reverdy Johnson of Maryland and John G. Whittier of Massachusetts united in tributes to his memory. The communion plate of the church was sold and the proceeds divided among the remaining members, and the bell removed to the tower of what is now St. John the Baptist Church (St. Peter street), where it is still in use. The church passed out of existence and its meeting-house was, in 1867, removed to Beverly, where it has been remodeled and used by the Methodists.

**Immaculate Conception, Church of the** (Roman Catholic), Hawthorne Boulevard, is of brick, and built in the Romanesque style of architecture. It was erected in 1857, dedicated in 1858, and remodeled and a tower added in 1880, being consecrated in 1890. It has a seating capacity of thirteen hundred persons. The bell is the largest in the city, weighing three thousand, two hundred and fifty pounds; the tone is in the key of B. It was cast by the Blake Bell Foundry, of Boston, and was blessed July 9, 1891. It is inscribed, "Immaculate Conception Parish to the Sacred Heart,"

and named "St. Mary's." The organ in the church was built by W. H. Ryder of Boston.

Roman Catholic services were held in Salem as early as May 6, 1790, by Rev. John Thayer, and the first church edifice, St. Mary's was built at the eastern corner of Mall and Bridge streets in 1821. For twenty-five years this was the only Roman Catholic church in Essex County, and the mother parish of all this region. This building was occupied until 1857, and in 1877, being considered unsafe, it was taken down and the lot sold.

**Lafayette Street Methodist Church**, 294 Lafayette street. This society was organized in 1840 and formerly occupied a wooden edifice at the corner of Lafayette and Harbor streets, which was destroyed during the great fire. The present attractive stone edifice with the parsonage attached was dedicated March 5, 1911.

**St. Anne's Church** (French Catholic), Jefferson avenue. The parish was organized in 1901 and the church built the same year. It has a seating capacity of seven hundred and fifty.

**St. James Church** (Roman Catholic). The wooden structure, 152 Federal street, built in 1849 to accommodate the increasing congregations which overcrowded St. Mary's Church, was occupied until 1893, when it was succeeded by the present conspicuous brick edifice, which was rebuilt in 1900, and has a seating capacity of 1300. This structure is 178 feet long and the tower is 200 feet in height. Nine large paintings adorn the walls. The organ, the largest and most powerful in the county, was built by R. Midmar & Son of Brooklyn, N. Y.

**St. John the Baptist Church** (Polish Catholic), 28 St. Peter street, opposite Federal street. This originally was the church of the Central Baptist Society, having separated from the First Baptist Society in 1825, and built the present meeting-house the next year. The building was raised and remodeled in 1877. In the tower is the bell formerly on the Howard Street Church. In 1903, this Polish Catholic society was organized, and on the union of the Central Baptist Society with the First Baptist in 1909, purchased the present edifice the following year.

**St. John's Ukrainian** (Greek Catholic), 124 Bridge street. Consecrated in 1923.

**St. Joseph's Church** (French Catholic), 135 Lafayette street, was organized in 1873. Its first church erected in 1884 and dedicated Aug. 25, 1885, was of wood and seated one thousand persons. The second church was dedicated Sept. 7, 1913 and was wrecked during the great fire the following year. Its walls were partly taken down and in remodeled form it was used for church purposes. The present church was started April 1, 1949 and was dedicated on May 21, 1950. The church has a seating capacity of 1165. The Chapel, dedicated to St. Joseph, is set directly to the rear of the main altar and has a seating capacity of 165.

A new parochial school building has been erected in the rear of the church on Harbor street and another on Lafayette street.

**St. Mary's Church** (Italian Catholic), 56 Margin street. The present church of brick and built in the Italian style of architecture, with bell tower on the rear of the south side, was dedicated Nov. 27, 1925, by Rev. Peter M. Piemonte representing his Eminence Cardinal O'Connell. The bell, the gift of Ettore Tassinari, for the first time in the history of Salem was cast on the grounds of the Church, and on July 19, 1925, was blessed by Cardinal O'Connell. A large crucifix, stations of the cross, and a shrine were secured in Italy by Rev. Fr. Piemonte. The beautiful windows came from Batavia. The Church supports a day nursery for Italian children.

**St. Nicholas Russian** (Greek Orthodox), 66 Forrester street.

**St. Peter's Church** (Episcopal). The present English gothic church of stone, occupied by this ancient Episcopal parish, at the corner of Brown and St. Peter streets, was built in 1833, on land given by Philip English, a wealthy merchant of his time, for the site of the first church erected by them in 1733. During the war of the Revolution public feeling against everything British ran so high that a law was enacted by the State Legislature forbidding the reading of the Episcopal service, under penalty of £100 and one year's imprisonment, and religious services were consequently

suspended, while the property of the society suffered from lawless violence. But calmer times followed, and this parish now enjoys its share of prosperity. The old bell, familiar to the ears of Salemites for a century and a half, still hangs in St. Peter's tower. It was cast by Abel Rudhall, at Gloucester, England, and was first rung in 1740, and is, therefore, the oldest church bell in the city. The initials of the maker, "A. R." surmounted by a crown upon the bell, were taken by many persons to mean "Anna Regina" and hence the story that Queen Anne gave this bell to the society. In 1885, a chime of ten bells was placed in St. Peter's tower, and these are rung on Sundays and days of service during the week. In the old edifice was the first organ ever placed in a Salem church, and this was imported from England by John Clark in 1743. A second organ followed in 1770, which was exchanged in 1819 for one imported from England by Dr. B. L. Oliver, who had it in his private residence, and who almost neglected his profession, so fond was he of playing upon this instrument. The tablets containing the Apostles' Creed, Lord's Prayer, and Ten Commandments, which were painted by John Gibbs of Boston, in 1738, for the old church, are still preserved, as well as the large folio volume of Common Prayer given the church in 1744, by the Rt. Hon. Sir. Arthur Onslow, then Speaker of the House of Commons of Great Britain. There were several memorial plates and cups used by the church, dated 1757, 1771, and 1785; but, as was the case at the First Church, the inconoclast, in the year of grace, 1817, seized upon many of these interesting relics of the past and consigned them to the melting-pot to be moulded into the fashion of the day, to the sincere regret of subsequent officers of the society. In the church and chapel are tablets to the memory of early members of the Episcopal Church in Salem, including John and Samuel Browne, members of the Massachusetts Bay Company in 1628, and of the first council, to Philip English, John Touzel, and John and Mary Bertram, the parents of Capt. John Bertram, a name associated with nearly every charitable undertaking in the city. Among the tablets to the memory of deceased rectors of the church, that

to Rev. James Oliver Scripture has an excellent medallion likeness of him, moulded by Miss Louisa Lander, the well-known sculptress, long a member of the parish. In the churchyard, at the right of the entrance to the church, is a carved slate headstone inscribed: "Here lyes buried ye body of Jonathan Pue, Esq., Late surveyor and searcher of his Majesties' customs in Salem, New England," who died in 1760, at the age of sixty-six years. Hawthorne has made him famous by weaving his name into the introduction to "*The Scarlet Letter*." A new parish house of concrete, replacing the wooden building next the church, was erected in 1936. (*See "St. Peter's Church Before the Revolution" (Tapley) Essex Institute Hist. Colls. v. 80.*).

**St. Thomas the Apostle, Church of** (Roman Catholic). The first meeting of the parishioners was held in Pickering school hall Jan. 28, 1928. Within nine working days, parishioners and friends had a church over which Cardinal O'Connell had appointed Rev. Edward J. Fraher as pastor. Within three years a new church arose on the grounds of the old Phelan estate, exactly on the Salem-Peabody line. On Dec. 21, 1930, the Feast of St. Thomas the Apostle, masses were celebrated in the beautiful Gothic style church which was dedicated by Bishop John Bertram Peterson on June 14, 1931. The side altar on the Gospel side is the gift of Mrs. William Crowninshield Endicott of Danvers.

**Second Church**, or East Church (Unitarian), was organized in 1718, by a separation from the First Church, the present edifice of freestone being built in 1846. Menard Lefaver, its architect (Church Records), also designed Holy Trinity, Brooklyn, Packer Institute, N. Y., and Church of the Savior (Unitarian), Brooklyn, N. Y. The old wooden meeting-house previously occupied by the society on Essex, between Bentley and Hardy streets, was made famous by Dr. William Bentley, the historian, patriot, radical and scholar, who preached there from 1783 until his death in 1819, and who lived first in the Elkins house where the Bentley school now stands, and then in the house still standing, number 106 Essex street. The graceful spire of the old meeting-house, from

which pealed out the welcome news of peace after our two wars with England, was removed by Capt. Robert Brookhouse to the grounds of his Swampscott villa, and stood there for years as a landmark indicating the spot selected by Hugh Peter for the location of Harvard College. The bell still sounds from the cupola of the Bentley schoolhouse. The society possesses many interesting communion cups and other gifts of its early members. The gothic decorations of the present edifice make the interior one of the finest in the city. With this society is united the Independent Society, formerly at Barton Square. The meeting-house of the latter was transformed into a theatre.

**Tabernacle Church** (Congregational). The church now called the Tabernacle Church, corner of Washington and Federal streets, originated in a division of the First Church, which was formed Aug. 6, 1629. The division was made in April, 1735. Its first meeting-house stood at what is now 242 Essex street, and was destroyed in the great fire of Oct. 6, 1774. In 1777, the society erected a meeting-house on the present site, which became generally known as the Tabernacle Church, because of its resemblance to Whitefield's Tabernacle in London. That was succeeded in 1854 by a wooden edifice, with a spire one hundred and eighty feet in height. Its fine organ was built by Woodberry and Harris. Salem was the first American port from which missionaries sailed. A notable event in the life of the Tabernacle Church and in modern Christian history, was the ordination, February 6, 1812, of five young men, Messrs. Judson, Newell, Hall, Nott and Rice, as the first "missionaries" from this country "to the heathen in Asia."

The one hundredth anniversary of that occasion was impressively observed by the ordination February 6, 1912 (in the church of 1854) of five young men, Messrs. Leete, Harlow, Holmes, Lyman and Maas, to a similar mission in foreign lands. The settee upon which both groups of missionaries sat when ordained, is preserved in the Historic Room of the present church. Both services are memorialized in a bronze tablet, the gift of J. Ackerman Coles,

M.D., LLD., of New York. The house of worship of 1854 was torn down in 1922 to make place for the present stone church, which was dedicated in October, 1924. In the Parish House is a beautiful memorial library, made possible by the generous bequest of Deacon Walter K. Bigelow, in memory of Rev. Samuel Worcester, D.D., his son Rev. Samuel M. Worcester, D.D., and Rev. DeWitt S. Clark, D.D., former pastors of the church. In 1924 the South Church (Congregational) merged with the Tabernacle Church. Portraits of all the pastors of the church are preserved, also the study chair of Rev. Samuel Worcester. The church also owns some old and interesting pieces of plate. The architects of the new church were Smith and Walker of Boston.

**Universalist Church.** The large brick meeting-house of this society stands at the foot of Rust street. The church was gathered in 1805, services having been held in various places in town as early as 1804. This building was erected in 1808, and it has been remodelled several times, last in 1924, when it was restored according to some of the original lines. A large and convenient chapel connected with the church and fronting on Ash street, was built in 1889. A new Hutchings organ was added in October, 1888.

**Wesley Methodist Church**, 8 North street, is a large brick edifice with stone trimmings, and in form of construction quite different from any other church building in the city. By means of sliding doors, the seating capacity can be much increased by connecting the Sunday-school rooms, which are at the street end of the building, with the large audience room. The windows of the church being of stained glass present a most attractive appearance in the evening when services are being held, the brightly lighted interior illuminating the large Gothic window on North street. The church has been the recipient of a fine organ, a memorial gift from a member of the society, the builders being Woodberry & Harris.

**Congregation Macazikay Hadas Synagogue (Orthodox)**, 9 Front street.

**Congregation Sons of Jacob and Community Center**, 289

Lafayette street. The exterior of the building (erected in 1952) is a modified treatment of Colonial architecture. The house of worship is reached through a spacious memorial lobby ahead of which is the main temple which seats about 500. To the left of the main temple is a meditation chapel.

## CHAPTER X

### SOCIETIES, CLUBS, ETC.

**American Legion Post 23**, 329 Essex street, corner Cambridge street, organized 1919. This formerly was the residence of Frank L. Balch from whom the Post purchased it in 1921.

**Association for the Relief of Aged and Destitute Women** was incorporated April 4, 1860. It occupies a brick mansion-house, 180 Derby street, where about thirty inmates are at present provided with all the comforts of a home. Through the kindness of many clergymen, Sunday afternoon services are held in the parlor during the winter months. The house was built about 1811 and occupied by Benjamin W. Crowninshield, a representative in Congress and Secretary of the Navy under Madison and Monroe. It was given for its present use by Robert Brookhouse, a successful merchant in the African trade. When President Monroe made his tour of the North in 1817, he arrived at Salem from Marblehead, July 8, and took possession of this house, which had been vacated and made ready for his reception, and here he sojourned until his departure for the East four days later. On the ninth of July, a great dinner was given in the southeastern room, at which were present Commodores Perry and Bainbridge, Generals Miller and Dearborn, Senator Silsbee, Lieutenant-Governor William Gray, Judge Story and other eminent men. This mansion was afterwards the residence, while he was collector of the port between 1825 and 1849, of General James Miller, the hero of Lundy's Lane, whose famous words, "I'll try, Sir," were stamped, by order of the government, after "Fort Erie," on the buttons of his regiment. In 1906, a considerable addition to the house was built at a cost of \$50,000 and again in 1916 extensive alterations were made. The Home was established at the suggestion of Rev. Michael Carlton, city missionary, and is supported by the income of donations. It may be visited daily between 2 and 5 o'clock p. m.

**Bertram Home for Aged Men**, 29 Washington Square, North, was founded in 1877, by Capt. John Bertram. The house was built in 1818 by John Forrester, and later enlarged and occupied for many years as the town residence of Col. George Peabody, son of Capt. Joseph Peabody. In the garden, best seen from Mall street, is the largest tulip tree in this region. The Home may be visited on any week day.

**Order of Elks**, instituted in 1902, have their clubhouse at 17 North street, formerly the residence of John D. Eaton.

**Family Service Association of Salem**, formerly the Family Welfare Society. Headquarters 1 Broad street. The original society was incorporated in 1901, after existing as an association for several years. It was formed for the purpose of "giving relief to the worthy poor, to prevent begging and imposture, and to diminish pauperism." While it is entirely independent of the other charitable societies of Salem, it works in harmony and co-operation with all. A "Fresh Air Fund," conducted by this organization, enables elderly or over-worked women and sickly children to obtain rest and relief.

**Father Mathew Catholic Total Abstinence Society**, 129 Essex street, was organized Nov. 14, 1875. It purchased its present headquarters, the Tucker estate, in 1896. The fine colonial doorway formerly on this house, is now preserved in the rear of the museum of the Essex Institute.

**Salem Fraternity**, 11 Central street, was organized in 1869. Its building, erected in 1811 for the Essex Bank, was designed by Charles Bulfinch, who submitted plans for the first Capitol at Washington and planned and built the State House at Boston. On renovating the rooms on the lower floor in 1899, after the removal of the First National Bank which had occupied the building since 1819, a false ceiling was discovered, upon removing which a beautiful stucco center-piece in the original ceiling was brought to light. The Fraternity rooms are open evenings, and are maintained primarily for boys in the city who are without friends or home influences. The rooms are free to all, and are supplied with books and

newspapers in abundance. Music and games add to the attractions of the place. Free instruction is given by competent volunteer teachers to all who desire to study, and the rooms are frequented by large numbers. The organization also conducts a small gymnasium, industrial classes, and a summer camp at Rowley.

Early in the eighteenth century the Custom House occupied rooms in a building on this site.

**Grand Army Hall.** The hall of Phil H. Sheridan Post, No. 34, G. A. R. (organized Dec. 10, 1867), was at 17 St. Peter street. General Sheridan paid a long-promised visit to Salem, Feb. 2, 1888. He was received by municipal authorities and the Post at City Hall, and he presented a signed likeness of himself to the Post, which had always borne his name.

During the war of 1861-5, more than three thousand men entered the Union service from this city, and more than two hundred were killed. Among our heroes were Brig.-Gen. Frederick W. Lander, Lt.-Col. Henry Merritt, Lt.-Col. John Hodges, Major Seth S. Buxton, Captains George W. Batchelder, Charles A. Dearborn, John Saunders, Lieutenants Charles G. Ward, Pickering D. Allen, George C. Bancroft, and Charles F. Williams, all of whom died in the service of their country.

**Kernwood Country Club**, off Kernwood street, a country club organized in 1914, occupies the beautiful estate of the late S. Endicott Peabody. The house was built in 1840 by Francis Peabody.

**Knights of Columbus**, 94 Washinton Square, East, organized in 1893, occupy as their club house, the former residence of U. S. Senator Nathaniel Silsbee. President Monroe, Henry Clay, Daniel Webster, and other eminent men, have been entertained here.

**Masonic Temple**, corner of Washington and Lynde streets, was erected in 1915-16, at a cost of \$250,000. It occupies the site of the Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse estate. (*See chapter on Historic Buildings, p. 169.*)

**North Shore Golf and Tennis Club**, Margin street, Peabody. Its grounds (60 acres) are finely located along the Danvers River,

There is a nine-hole course about 3,100 yards in length. Open to the public by payment of a fee.

**Now and Then Association**, 36 Washington Square, South, a social and beneficiary organization for young men, was organized in 1886 under an agreement to meet "now and then." It has a membership (1937) of 438, and holds property valued at \$40,000, nothing ever having been received by bequest. Connected with its club house is "Now and Then Hall" (entrance 102 Essex street) seating 900 persons.

**Salem Country Club**, West Peabody, was organized in 1895 as the Salem Golf Club. In 1927, the club reorganized and purchased 750 acres in West Peabody, which has been laid out with one of the finest courses in the country, tennis courts, etc. A clubhouse of generous proportions has also been erected, from which there is a superb view of the sea and the surrounding country.

**Plummer Farm School**. Passing over the causeway from the Neck to Winter Island, the visitor comes, first, to the French-roofed wooden building on the left of the driveway. This is the Plummer Farm School, a reformatory institution for boys. It was endowed by Miss Caroline Plummer, whose bequests also built Plummer Hall and founded the Plummer Professorship of Christian Morals at Harvard University. The original bequest was \$26,196.68, and the fund had increased, between 1855 and 1870, to \$50,000. Capt. John Bertram made a bequest of \$35,000 to the school. The institution was incorporated in 1855, and the building erected and school opened in 1870. Thirty-six boys are accommodated at present. There is a school, and carpentry, chair-seating, and other industries are taught. Visitors are admitted on Wednesday afternoon from three until six o'clock.

**Salem Charitable Mechanic Association**, organized in 1817, meets annually for the election of officers. Its library of nearly 4,000 volumes has been transferred to the Essex Institute.

**Salem Marine Society**. This is the oldest charitable organization in the city. The society was formed in 1766, "to relieve such of their Members as through misfortune at Sea, or otherwise, or

by Reason of Old Age or Sickness, stand in Need of Relief, & the necessitous Families of deceased members; and also to communicate in writing, to be lodged with the Society, the Observations they make at Sea of any Matters which may render Navigation, particularly on this Coast, easier and safer." The Franklin Building came into possession of the society about 1833, by bequest of Capt. Thomas Perkins, a member. In 1925, the building was sold and upon its site the Hotel Hawthorne was erected. Upon the roof of the hotel has been constructed a reproduction of a ship's cabin, which constitutes the headquarters of the society. Here are several portraits of shipmasters and vessels, as well as an album containing an interesting collection of portraits of members of the society. At the present time the limit in membership, one hundred persons, has been reached, and all are sons or grandsons of former members. The officers for 1952 are: Master, Dudley Pickman Rogers; Deputy Master, Albert Goodhue, Jr.; Treasurer Charles F. Allen; Clerk, Francis Tuckerman Parker.

**North Shore Children's Friend Society**, until 1949 the Seamen's Orphan and Children's Friend Society, 7 Carpenter street, originally known as "The Children's Friend Society," and was initiated by Rev. Michael Carlton, a most benevolent man and minister at large, whose name is connected with the early efforts of charitable organizations in Salem to assist orphan children. After taking children to his own home, where they were cared for by Mrs. Carlton and himself, assistance was received from friends and rooms were occupied in the old building, 53 Charter street, near his residence, known as the "Dr. Grimshawe House." The society was organized in 1839. The present house was erected in 1877. The first building was the gift of Robert Brookhouse, and it was fitted up by various donations and bequests. A building in the rear is used as a hospital.

**Salem Female Charitable Society**, founded in 1801 and incorporated in 1804 to assist children and aged women. About 1844 when the Seaman's Orphan and Children's Friend Society was formed the work with children were given over to them, this society

continuing to help aged women. The Board consists of a First Directress, Miss Elizabeth W. Coggin; Second Directress, Miss Margaret Nichols; Treasurer, Miss Eleanor Broadhead; Recording Secretary, Mrs. Harold B. Pingree; Corresponding Secretary, Miss Elizabeth S. Osgood; Managers, Mrs. Walter L. Abbot, Miss Elizabeth G. Barker, Mrs. Albert Goodhue, Miss Mary E. Nichols, Mrs. Stuart Osgood, Mrs. Stephen Phillips and Mrs. William Denny Sargent. Meetings are held four times a year and the annual meeting the first Wednesday in May.

**Woman's Friend Society** was founded by an energetic group of Salem women in 1876. The women opened a "Girls Reading Room" in the center of town, and soon were loaned a portion of a home, where rooms could be rented and simple entertainment offered. Then the work was expanded by starting an employment "bureau," and a center of distribution for needlework to women who must work in their own homes. In 1879 Captain John Bertram, prominent merchant and philanthropist, loaned one-half of a large brick house to the society. At his death this was given outright by his daughter, Jennie (Bertram) Emmerton, and became the permanent headquarters. Later, the other half was purchased, and a large ell built through the efforts of generous members and friends. The society has always been alert to innovations and changes in social work. For many years an important branch was the "Mission to the Sick," a weekly distribution of food baskets to needy shut-ins. An industrial branch taught women dress-making and fine needlework. Both branches were discontinued when need for them ceased. An important department, the work of the District Nurse, started in 1897, is still an active part of the society.

The home of the Woman's Friend Society, now known as Emmer-ton House, located at 12 Hawthorne Boulevard, is a pleasing tribute to the work of the members of the society. This fine old early nineteenth century Salem residence is comfortably adapted as an attractive inexpensive home for business women and students. The house, with its fine McIntire carving, convenient to the center of Salem, has accomodations for twenty-five women in single or double

rooms. The house is managed by a capable resident director, in co-operation with the Board of Directors of the Woman's Friend Society. Breakfast and dinner, included in the weekly rate, are served in a pleasant dining-room. Attractive living-rooms and garden for the use of all guests, make Emmerton House a very desirable home. When available, rooms are rented to transients.

**Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society**, organized Oct. 19, 1857, has its headquarters at 10 Boston street.

**Young Men's Christian Association**, 288 Essex street. This building of light brick and freestone, the home of the Salem Y. M. C. A., was built in 1898. Its auditorium is named Ames Hall, in honor of George Leonard Ames, a benefactor of the Association. It covers the site of the Sanders homestead, where Alexander Graham Bell perfected the telephone, to commemorate which a bronze tablet is affixed to the front of the building. Here, earlier, was the house where Stephen Sewall, the clerk of the witchcraft court, resided. There are bowling alleys, a fine swimming tank and a well-equipped gymnasium. Newspapers, periodicals and books are generously provided. There is also a "boy's branch," dating from 1869, which is the oldest one in the world. The Salem Association was established in 1858, and from 1884 to 1898 was located at 20½ Central street.

**Young Women's Association**, 18 Brown street, organized Jan. 1, 1904, for the use of young women of Salem and vicinity. Co-operative housekeeping for resident members. Transients accommodated during the summer.

## CHAPTER XI

### CEMETERIES, PARKS AND SQUARES

**Broad Street Burial Ground.** In the rear of the schoolhouses at the corner of Broad and Summer streets is the Broad Street Cemetery, which was laid out in 1655, burials having previously taken place there. This whole region was then "Broadfield," and belonged to Governor Endecott. Here are buried George Corwin, the sheriff who served the warrants on the persons convicted of witchcraft, Judge Nathaniel Ropes, Col. Timothy Pickering, Gen. Frederick W. Lander, and Caroline Plummer, a name associated with literary and charitable institutions in Salem and a professorship at Harvard. The older stones are upon the higher ground at the southern side: among them are those of John Norman, 1713; Mary Lambert, 1693; and the three Sewall children, 1684-88, the record on the last-named stone closing with a quaint and pathetic verse.

**Charter Street Burial Ground.** This is the oldest burial ground in the city, and was originally known as "Burying Point," being situated on a bluff which formerly projected into the South river. Here are probably buried Gov. John Endecott's first wife and the Lady Arbella Johnson and Mrs. George Phillips, who came on the Winthrop fleet, but there are no stones. The oldest stones can be found just east of the large willow tree in the center of the ground and west of it towards the western fence and in the rear of the "Grimshawe House." The oldest stone is that of "Doraty, wife to Philip Cromwell," 1673. Capt. Richard More, who came in the "Mayflower," as a boy, is buried here. A very curious stone erected to the memory of Timothy Lindall, a leading merchant of Salem, should be noticed, as well as that to Nathaniel Mather, the precocious younger brother of the celebrated Cotton Mather of Boston, whose epitaph reads: "An aged person that had seen but nineteen winters in the world." Governor Bradstreet,



GRAVESTONES IN THE CHARTER STREET CEMETERY

Rev. John Higginson, Chief Justice Lynde and Judge Hathorne of the witchcraft court are also buried here. Governor Bradstreet's tomb, covered with a simple monument erected by the Province, is located on the highest part of the ground, about midway on the western side. Originally an elaborate inscription in Latin was to be read upon the slab, but it is now wholly worn away by the elements. The rest of the tombs in the place having monuments are marked, but not a letter remains to show the identity of this one. Situated at the rear of the cemetery on the left land, near the stone of Dorothy Cromwell, is that of Miss Mary Cromwell, dated 1683. This is the finest and only perfect example of its class of ancient gravestones known to exist in the county, and one of the two or three now standing in New England. Here is also the gravestone of "Dr. John Swinnerton, Physician," who died in 1688. The name of Dr. Swinnerton appears in "The House of the Seven Gables," and again, as the ancient apothecary, with the sign of "The Brazen Serpent," in the "Doliver Romance," and the name of his own ancestor Hathorne, the romancer has used as freely. Hawthorne frequented, and often mentioned in his writings, this old burial ground. A bronze tablet, placed by the city upon the iron fence on the street, bears the following inscription:

THIS GROUND, THE FIRST SET APART IN SALEM FOR THE BURIAL OF THE DEAD, AND, SINCE 1637 KNOWN AS THE BURYING POINT, CONTAINS THE GRAVES OF GOVERNOR BRADSTREET, CHIEF JUSTICE LYNDE, AND OTHERS WHOSE VIRTUES, HONORS, COURAGE AND SAGACITY, HAVE NOBLY ILLUSTRATED THE HISTORY OF SALEM.

**Friends' Cemetery**, 396½ Essex street. Here, for a hundred years from 1718, stood the second meeting-house of the Society of Friends.

**Greenlawn Cemetery**, bounded by Orne and Appleton streets and Liberty Hill avenue, is the principal burial place owned and administered by the city. It was first used in 1807. A beautiful memorial chapel and conservatory, erected in 1894, by Walter Scott Dickson, in memory of his wife, is located here, and also a soldiers' monument, placed here by the Sons of Veterans.

**Harmony Grove Cemetery.** By continuing down School and Grove streets to 30 Grove street, the main entrance of Harmony Grove Cemetery is reached. It comprises about sixty-five acres and was one of the first of the rural cemeteries to be established in this neighborhood (1840). An arch of rough stones spans the carriage-way at the entrance. It was fortunate in having within its precincts some fine wooded growth, which gives it a quiet and secluded air. Many noted persons are buried here, among them Jesse Smith, a body-guard of Washington; General James Miller, whose words, "I'll try, sir," are historic; William Bentley, the faithful pastor, whose diary chronicled Salem contemporary history for thirty-five years; George Peabody, the philanthropist; Capt. John Bertram, Salem's benefactor; Joseph Peabody, eminent merchant, Leverett Saltonstall, first mayor and Stephen C. Phillips, second mayor of Salem. A stone is here erected to Frederick Townsend Ward, a native of Salem, a mandarin of the Chinese empire, and the commander of the "Ever Victorious Army." The beautiful memorial chapel, built in 1905, is a bequest of Mrs. Nancy C. Blake in memory of her son, George Harrison Blake, who died in 1869; a portrait of the latter by Charles Osgood hangs upon one of the walls. The Joseph Peabody Memorial Window designed by Charles J. Connick was placed in the chapel in 1921 in memory of one of Salem's foremost shipmasters. The subject-matter is treated symbolically rather than pictorially, and the figure of Christ in the center panel, which is the outstanding feature of the window, is in itself, a symbol of His Universal Love and Sympathy, recalling especially His Companionship with fishermen and sailors. Reference to the sea is made more powerful and direct by the use of the beautiful text from the Psalms, beginning, "They that go down to the sea in ships": while a more personal reference is found in the introduction of ships in the left and right lancets, similar to those in Joseph Peabody's fleet, in harbor and on the high seas. This personal suggestion is amplified by small figures, symbols, and devices, related to the sea and ships and commerce with foreign countries. Coats of arms of Salem, the Peabody family,

Massachusetts, and the United States are also featured. The technique represents a new word in modern windows, both in method of construction employed and the material, preserving the spirit of the best period of European glass, with which the design is also in harmony. All the windows were designed and executed by Mr. Connick, ensuring perfect concord in color and treatment. A soldiers' lot, on Greenwood avenue, has a fine granite monument and tablet, erected by means of the M. Fenollosa fund. Adjoining the chapel is a crematory of the most modern type, the hall of which is a room of dignified proportions and of considerable architectural beauty; connected therewith is a columbarium. The chapel and crematory are open from 9 a. m. to 5 p. m. on week days throughout the year, and on Sunday afternoons during the Summer months.

**Howard Street Burial Ground** adjoins the Prescott school-house and is under the care of the city. The first interments were made in 1801, and in the tomb of George Crowninshield reposed temporarily the bodies of Captain Lawrence and Lieutenant Ludlow of the *Chesapeake*.

**St. Mary's Cemetery**, At 220 North street is the extensive burial ground of the Roman Catholics, much beautified in recent years by the erection of an iron fence and planting of shrubs and trees.



**The Common**, which was named Washington Square in 1802, is a territory of about eight acres, bounded by what were known as, until 1880, Newbury, Brown, Pleasant and Forrester streets, but are now called by the general name of Washington Square. This has long been public land. Originally the south-

ern, southeastern, and central portions were swamp, containing five ponds, and there were several hillocks. In front of what is now the Second or East Church, was the pen, the upland portion of what is now the Common. This is one of two places where the cows and goats were brought mornings and to which they were returned at night, and from which the cowherd, a town functionary under bonds, took away the cows to the Neck for the day, and to which he returned them at night to the owners. On this part military drill was regularly held, and in 1714 the commoners voted that the spot "where trainings are held in front of Nathaniel Higginson's house shall be forever kept as a training field for the use of Salem." It is now a lawn, the ponds having been filled in and the entire surface levelled in 1801, when Elias Hasket Derby, 2nd, then a colonel in the militia, raised about \$2,500 for putting the reservation in better condition for a "training field." A wooden fence with four elaborate gates was provided in 1805. The western gate was ornamented with wood carvings by the architect Samuel McIntire, including a medallion portrait of Washington, now preserved in the museum of the Essex Institute. The large elms on the Common were planted about 1818 to replace Lombardy poplars, the trees first set out in 1802, and which were destroyed in the great gale of Sept. 23, 1815.

**Forest River Park**, reached through Clifton avenue, from Lafayette street, is finely located on rolling land skirting the harbor. It was purchased by the city and opened in 1907. It contains 29



WASHINGTON

Medallion carved in wood  
by Samuel McIntire

acres and is equipped with a bathing basin and spaces for games and sports. (*See Pioneers' Village*, p. 143).

**Gallows Hill Park**, where the witches were hanged, contains 22 acres. It has been embellished with trees and shrubs. A ball field has been laid out.

**Highland Park**, off Highland avenue, contains 243 acres, and maintains a municipal golf course.

**Ledge Hill Park** is opposite the main entrance to Harmony Grove Cemetery, and was devised to the city by the will of Esther C. Mack, in 1885, being confirmed by the will of her brother, Dr. William Mack, in 1895. This is an extensive rocky eminence, affording an excellent view of the city and harbor. It contains a granite ledge with rare geological markings of interest to the student.

**Liberty Hill**, which is reached by way of Liberty Hill avenue, has been a park from the first settlement, and is a favorite resort for many people on account of "Cold Spring"; these springs of pure cold water have been used for centuries. This is a delightful and picturesque spot; and here, in 1844, the Millerites conducted a camp meeting; ten thousand people attending on a single Sunday.

**The Willows.** At the easterly end of the city is the park called the Willows. Not only is this resorted to by the people of the city, but pleasant summer days bring thousands of visitors by water and land from Boston, Lowell, and nearer towns and cities. Motor-boats ply about the harbor and to Baker's Island. The location is beautiful, being on a peninsular jutting out in a rugged point and is one of the few such sites on our coast freely accessible to the public. To the north, across the water, lies the Beverly shore, with its summer residences, peeping out from among the trees; Cape Ann is at the northeast; Great and Little Misery, Baker's (with its single lighthouse). Lowell or Catta (sometimes Cat), where Dr. Hall Jackson's smallpox hospital was erected just before the Revolution, and the smaller islands of the harbor, directly seaward; and on the south is the rocky headland of Marblehead, with Fort Miller



THE WILLOWS

"THE CLIFFS," BAKER'S ISLAND

at the water's edge. On fine days the harbor is enlivened by scores of sailing craft and launches. The city provides open pavilions, where parties may lunch and enjoy the scenery and surroundings. Several restaurants are rented by the city, and at any of them, dinner or supper may be had at a moderate price; and for children there are the amusements usually found in public places. The old trees which gave the name to this marine park, are European white willows. They were planted by the Salem Board of Health in 1801, to provide a shady walk for convalescents at an old hospital. Nine of the forty trees remain today.

THE J. C. B. SMITH SWIMMING POOL, the largest on the Atlantic seaboard, was built with funds left by Mr. Smith and from funds furnished from a Federal project.

JUNIPER POINT. Adjoining the Willows to the south is Juniper Point, a summer resort, with many pleasantly situated cottages and some fine year-round houses.

FORT LEE. There have been forts and blockhouses on Salem Neck from the earliest times. Fort Lee is located on the heights at the left, beyond the city farm. There was a fort constructed on this site as early as 1742, and it was occupied in the War of 1812-15. In the War of the Rebellion it mounted four guns, which commanded the approaches to the outer harbor. It was transferred by the United States Government to the City of Salem in 1922. The earthworks add much to the picturesque appearance of the Neck. Bentley's Rock is nearby.

**Winter Island.** Opposite Fort Lee, to the right, lies Winter Island, reached by a causeway. In the early days this was the center of the fishing industry and a place of shipbuilding; many people resided there and on the adjacent portions of the Neck, and two or more taverns flourished there in early days. The noted frigate *Essex*, of thirty-two guns, was built here in 1799, under the supervision of Capt. Joseph Waters, by Enos Briggs, at a spot near the lighthouse.

FORT PICKERING is on Winter Island. There was a fort here as early as 1643. During the War of 1812-15 it was occupied, and

at the time of the Civil War it was fortified with six guns. During the Spanish-American War two companies of the Mass. 1st Heavy Artillery were stationed here. The fort was located here to prevent the passage of unfriendly vessels into the inner harbor. It is now still there, the property of the City of Salem.

WINTER ISLAND LIGHTHOUSE, reached by a bridge, is near Fort Pickering.

A portion of Winter Island has been taken over by the Government as an airport for the United States Coast Guard Service.

**Town House Square.** This square is formed by the crossing of Essex and Washington streets. From the first settlement this has been the center of population and business, and the scene of many important events.

**RED CROSS INCIDENT.** Town House Square is undoubtedly the scene of Endecott's cutting the red cross of St. George from the flag of England. He was so opposed to all suggestions of papacy that he argued that a banner bearing a cross was improper in a Puritan commonwealth, and without fear of magistrates or of the offence to his sovereign, he deliberately removed the obnoxious emblem of the church. For this act he was disfranchised for one year by the authorities of the colony, though they secretly sympathized with him, but feared the effect the act would produce upon the future relations between the king and the colony.

THE TOWN PUMP that Hawthorne wrote about in "A Rill from the Town Pump," is commemorated by the site of the old town pump in Town House Square, which is approximately marked by a circular stone sunk in the pavement bearing the letter "H." (See chapter on Hawthorne, p. 54.)

THE WATCH HOUSE, was first a part of the town-, court-, and school-house when the latter was removed to the middle of Washington street in 1676. The watch house was probably a small ell. In 1712, this little room was added to the schoolroom, and a new watch house was built on the north side of the square in Washington street, midway between what is now the Northeby block and the Neal and Newhall building. It was little more than a large

sentry box, and upon its top was a carved wooden, life-size figure of a soldier, bearing upon its breast the legend "Anna Regina, 1712." On this spot two cannon were mounted in the early days.

**Washington Street** may be said to have been the only "street" in Salem for many years after its settlement, having been laid out, four rods wide, in the original laying out of the town, about 1629. It ran from the cove on the South river to a beach on the North river and was the village green of the town for the first two hundred years. The other early paths, including Essex street, were narrow, crooked ways.

## CHAPTER XII

### PROMINENT CITIZENS AND VISITORS

**Gen. Stephen Abbot** (1749-1813), an officer in the Revolution and first colonel of the Salem Cadets, lived at 21 Federal street, where he entertained Washington in 1789.

**President John Adams** (1735-1826) as a young lawyer frequently visited Salem while riding the eastern circuit. In 1769 John Adams tried a murder case in the old court house in Town House Square, appearing for the defendant.

**William Allen** (1602-1678), one of the Old Planters, lived in a house that formerly stood on the western corner of Essex and Elm streets.

**Gov. John Albion Andrew** (1818-1867), Civil War Governor of Massachusetts, while at the Dane Law School, frequently visited the Andrew House, 13 Washington Square, West. He also was entertained by Hon. Robert S. Rantoul at 17 Winter street and at Gedney Court.

**President Chester A. Arthur** (1830-1886) visited the Essex Institute and the Peabody Museum on Sept. 8, 1882, having driven to Salem from Marblehead, where he was entertained after landing from the U. S. S. "Despatch," while on a cruise in eastern waters.

**Rev. Thomas Barnard** (1748-1814), first pastor of the North church, and a central figure in the affair at the North Bridge, February, 1775, lived at that time in the large gambrel-roofed house now nestling among noble elms and buttonwoods, at 393 Essex street. Rev. Brown Emerson afterwards lived there.

**Gov. Jonathan Belcher** (1682-1757) was the guest of Chief Justice Lynde on Feb. 28, 1739, at this house, formerly on the site of the Lynde block, 145 Essex street.

**Prof. Alexander Graham Bell** (1847-1926) conducted many of the experiments and tests which led to his invention of the telephone in the Sanders house, 292 Essex street, on the site of the Y. M. C. A. building.



**Rev. William Bentley** (1759-1819), historian, radical and scholar, lived in the house numbered 106 Essex street. He was pastor of the East Church from 1783 until his decease. His diary, in four volumes, has been published by the Essex Institute.

**Capt. John Bertram** (1796-1882), ship-owner, railway projector, and one of two or three great benefactors of Salem. He built and occupied the brick house on Essex street, now the Public Library.

**United States Senator William E. Borah** (1865-1940) was the guest of honor and speaker at a meeting of the Essex Club held in the Hotel Hawthorne on April 11, 1927. Mr. Borah was at the time chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee.

**Nathaniel Bowditch** (1773-1838), eminent mathematician, was born March 26, 1773, in a picturesque house that formerly stood at 2 Brown street, but is now in the rear, at the end of Kimball court. During the last years of his residence in Salem he lived at 312 Essex street. Rev. Samuel Johnson, a noted liberal preacher, eminent scholar and writer, the author of "Oriental Religions," was born in the Brown street house.

**Gov. Simon Bradstreet** (1603-1697), Colonial Governor of Massachusetts, lived and died in a house formerly on the site of the museum building of the Essex Institute. He was buried in the Charter Street Burying Ground.

**Judge Lincoln F. Brigham** (1819-1895), Chief Justice of the Massachusetts Superior Court. Lived in the Tontine block, Warren street, destroyed in the great fire of 1914.

**Rev. Charles T. Brooks** (1813-1883), the essayist and poet, resided at 38 Washington Square, South.

**Gov. William Burnett** (1688-1729) convened the General Court in the old Salem Town House in 1728 and 1729.

**United States Senator George Cabot** (1751-1823), the distinguished Federalist president of the Hartford Convention was born in a house formerly on the site of the Empire Theatre, 285 Essex street.

**Justice Salmon P. Chase** (1808-1873), the financier of the Civil War, and afterwards Chief Justice of the United States, visited Collector Rantoul at the Custom House in the summer of 1866. Judge Chase had many friends hereabouts and enjoyed frequent trips with them down the harbor and among the islands in the Custom House boat "Excelsior." Such guests as Dr. Briggs, General Oliver, Major Huntington, Stephen and Willard Phillips, Alpheus Crosby, General Cogswell, Darwin E. Ware, and James A. Gillis made up the party.

**Joseph Hodges Choate** (1832-1917) one of the best known members of the bar in the history of the nation. Ambassador to the Court of St. James and chairman of the American delegation to the Second Hague Conference of 1907. His father was Dr. George Choate, one-time president of the Salem Athenæum.

**Rufus Choate** (1799-1859), "the wizard of the bar," while living in Salem occupied the house 14 Lynde street, and also lived at 114 Federal street.

**United States Senator Henry Clay** of Kentucky (1777-1852) arrived in Salem Oct. 29. 1833 and was entertained at the home of his colleague Senator Nathaniel Silsbee. He was accompanied by Mrs. Clay. He attended a lecture given under the auspices of the Salem Lyceum at the Tabernacle by Hon. Edward Everett and the following day visited the East India Marine hall and the Athenæum.

**Gen. William Cogswell** (1838-1895), lived in the West block, 7 Summer street. He was a brigadier general in the Civil War, twice mayor of Salem, and a member of Congress. He was buried from the Tabernacle Church with military honors.

**President Calvin Coolidge** (1872-1933) and Mrs. Coolidge were

frequent visitors to Salem while spending the summer of 1925 at White Court in Swampscott. President and Mrs Coolidge were attendants at the Tabernacle (Congregational) church on several occasions.

**John Singleton Copley** (1735-1815), the celebrated artist, came to Salem in 1767 or 1768 and lived in the Ruck house, 8 Mill street. While here he painted many local magnates' portraits. His son, subsequently Lord Lyndhurst, Lord Chancellor of England, was brought here when an infant.

**Giles Corey** (1616-1692) lived on the site of 46 Boston street, before his removal to his last residence in what is now West Peabody. He was pressed to death for refusing to plead at the time of the witchcraft trials, the only time in America this penalty was inflicted.

**Benjamin W. Crowninshield** (1772-1851), member of Congress and Secretary of the Navy under Madison and Monroe, built and lived in the house, 180 Derby street, now the "Old Ladies' Home."

**Vice President Charles Gates Dawes** (1865-1951) was the guest of honor at the dinner in celebration of the three hundredth anniversary of the settlement of Salem, held in the State Armory on July 4, 1926. A few weeks before General Dawes had received the medal of the City of Salem, the presentation being made in the capital in Washington, by Russell Leigh Jackson, representative of Mayor George J. Bates.

**King Edward VII** (1841-1910), when Prince of Wales, was received on his Eastern tour, by the city government of Salem, Oct. 20, 1860. The affair was most amusing. The mayor and aldermen had been provided with an enclosure placed against the iron fence of the tunnel, just at its entrance from the railroad station, and the length of the train between the engine driver's cab and the platform of the Prince's car had been measured and a mark made on the side of the tunnel opposite which the engine driver was to stop in order to bring the Prince's platform against the enclosure containing the mayor and aldermen. But before the

train left Boston another car was added between the engine and the Prince's car, bringing the platform of the latter, when it came to a standstill, a rod or two away from the city government. Signals were made to the engine-driver to start up his train, and he, supposing the function had been for some reason abandoned, pushed on into the tunnel. As soon as possible the city government broke loose from the enclosure, made their way through the dense mass of people, followed the train into the tunnel, and some of them, including His Honor Mayor Webb, succeeded in getting on board, while others returned to the upper air, and a few, unable to face the grotesque situation, pursued their way on foot to the northern end of the tunnel, where they emerged. His Royal Highness was graciously pleased to remark that he was delighted with what he saw of the ancient city of Salem.

**King Edward VIII** (1893- ) while Prince of Wales was a guest of Mr. and Mrs. Bayard Tuckerman of Hamilton in October, 1924, motoring over the road from Lowell. He did not, however, pass through Salem.

**Gov. John Endecott** (1589-1665), lived in "a faire house," whose oaken frame had been brought from England and set up at Cape Ann and afterward removed to Salem and located near what is now 53 Washington street. The colony granted him the "Orchard Farm" at Danvers.

**Judge William Crowninshield Endicott** (1826-1900) was born in the house now the Old Ladies' Home, 180 Derby street, and in after life lived for some thirty years in the Cabot house, 365 Essex street. He became a Justice of the Supreme Court, and Secretary of War under President Cleveland. He was the father-in-law of the Rt. Hon. Joseph Chamberlain, British statesman, who visited the house on several occasions.

**Prof. Moses G. Farmer** (1820-1893) lived at 11 Pearl street, and later on Lafayette street and at 316 Essex street. He invented an electric lamp in 1859, and afterwards constructed, for the city of Boston, the first successful electric fire alarm.

**Rev. Joseph B. Felt** (1789-1869), the historian, and author

of "Annals of Salem," and other historical works, resided at 27 Norman street.

**Gov. Thomas Gage** (1720-1787) transferred the seat of government to Salem in June, 1774, and, during that summer, lived at the Hooper house in Danvers (now removed to Washington, D. C.) guarded by a regiment of British regulars.

**United States Senator Benjamin Goodhue** (1748-1814), was born at 70 Boston street. Here also was born, Jan. 11, 1812, Dr. Henry Wheatland, the founder of the Essex Institute. Senator Goodhue, his uncle, also lived at 403 Essex street.

**President Ulysses S. Grant** (1822-1885) passed through the city by rail, Oct. 17, 1871, and was received by the city government upon a temporary platform erected in Washington street, to which the President stepped from his car and addressed a few words to the people.

**Hon. William Gray, Jr.** (1750-1825) was born in Lynn but came to Salem at an early age and became one of the greatest merchants and ship-owners in the country. He built and lived in a mansion now part of the New Essex House. His counting room (destroyed in the great fire of 1914) was at 311 Derby street. He was Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts in 1810-11.

**King Gustav VI** (1883- ) and Queen Louise of Sweden, while crown prince and crown princess visited the House of the Seven Gables and the Peabody Museum on June 18, 1926 while on a tour of the United States.

**Alexander Hamilton** (1757-1804) visited Salem June 20, 1800, and was entertained at the Benjamin Pickman house, 165 Essex street. Five years later the new Assembly Hall on Chestnut street was built and later named in his honor.

**Capt. Jonathan Haraden** (1745-1803), the redoubtable commander of the Revolutionary privateer "Gen. Pickering," and "Tyrannicide," lived in the large brick house, since altered to a double tenement, 32 and 34 Charter street.

**President Benjamin Harrison** (1833-1901) visited the Essex

Institute and the Peabody Museum on Aug. 12, 1893, coming from Beverly, where he was the guest of his daughter.

**Nathaniel Hawthorne** (1804-1864). (*See chapter on Hawthorne, p. 54.*)

**Mrs. Sophia (Peabody) Hawthorne** (1810-1871), wife of Nathaniel Hawthorne, was born at 53 Summer street.

**Rev. Francis Higginson** (1588-1630), the first "teacher" of the Salem church, lived midway between what is now the Daniel Low Company building and the Price block. He was the author of "New England's Plantation," and the ancestor of the American Higginsons. He came in 1629 and died the next year.

**Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke** (1728-1829), centenarian physician of Salem, lived where the Naumkeag building now stands, 205 Essex street. The Essex Institute has his professional journals, recording a medical practice of eighty years' duration. He was the first president of the Philosophical Society, of the Salem Athenæum, and of the Essex Historical Society; the friend and correspondent of leading men of science and letters, active in every public enterprise, especially in building the Salem and Boston Turnpike; and seven months before his death presided at a dinner of the Massachusetts Medical Society, given in his honor, on his one hundredth birthday. His portraits are at the Institute and at the Athenæum.



**President Andrew Jackson** (1767-1845) visited Salem, June 26, 1833, and passed the night at the "Mansion House," which then stood near the head of Central street. On the following day, before breakfast, he visited the museum of the East India Marine Society and other points of interest, and at nine o'clock left for Lowell.

**Rev. Samuel Johnson** (1822-1882), liberal preacher, eminent scholar and author of "Oriental Religions," was born at 2 Brown

street, the birthplace of Dr. Bowditch. The building is now removed to the end of Kimball court.

**Louis Kossuth** (1802-1894), the Hungarian patriot, was entertained in Salem, May 6, 1852, being welcomed in front of the Essex House by the Mayor, Hon. Charles W. Upham, in an eloquent address, and later driven about the city.

**The Marquis de Lafayette** (1757-1834) visited Salem Oct. 29, 1784, and was entertained at the Assembly Hall, 138 Federal street. He again visited Salem, Aug. 31, 1824, and was accorded a grand ovation by sailors in uniform massed at the hill on Lafayette street, and by the school children on the Common. He was welcomed by Judge Story in front of the Essex House on his arrival. The hotel was then known as the Essex Coffee House. Lafayette spent the night there, and for a short time after it was called the Lafayette Coffee House. He dined at Hamilton Hall, with three hundred guests, and was entertained by Judge Story at 26 Winter street in the evening. Here he stood on the front doorstep with his host, and shook hands with many admirers who passed through the grounds from Winter to Oliver street. That the Marquis was pleased with his reception in Salem appears from two accounts of his American tour, printed in France on his return home.\*

During his visit he was several times at and near Washington Square, and an elaborate arch was erected at the head of Winter street, from which hung a decoration printed on American duck woven at the factory of William Gray, standing in Spring street, and later occupied by the Pulsifers, as an oil-cloth factory, and a paint shop by the Hon. David M. Little for boat building, and by Ross Turner as a studio. This decoration is now at the Essex Institute and bears a verse composed by the late George C. Chase, then a bookkeeper at the duck factory. The verse is as follows,

\* In each of these towns he was the object of the same demonstrations; but it was at Salem that the brilliancy of his reception was particularly marked; the rain that fell in torrents did not damp the ardor of anybody. Here and at Beverly he attempted in vain to dismiss the civic escorts which attended him; the very children, for once, refused to obey him.—*Voyage du General Lafayette aux Etats-Unis d'Amerique*: Paris, 1826.

and is perpetuated in several of the memoirs of Lafayette's last visit to America:

“While winds shall blow, and seas shall roll,  
While aught remains that's good and great,  
Our NATIVE DUCK, from pole to pole,  
Shall waft the fame of LA-FAYETTE.”

**Gen. Frederick West Lander** (1822-1862), brave officer in the Civil War, was born at 5 Barton square. Educated as a civil engineer, he was employed by the government to report on the feasibility of a railroad to the Pacific. He also constructed the great wagon-road which made the railroad possible, and on one of his surveys, he was the only member who returned alive. In 1861, when Sumter fell, he was in Texas on a secret embassy from the government and escaped with great difficulty at the last moment, bringing important advices to Washington. He was made the first commissioned brigadier, May 17, and in June was assigned to a command on the upper Potomac. He was shot in the leg while undertaking a reconnaissance at Edward's Ferry. His wound had not healed when he reported for duty to General Hancock, in January, 1862. His death was announced March 3, in a special order from General McClellan. His remains were brought here, and, after lying in state at the City Hall, were buried from the South Church with a degree of pomp and ceremony unequalled since the funeral honors accorded in 1813 to Lawrence and Ludlow.

**Gov. Levi Lincoln** (1728-1868) was entertained by Rev. Dr. Brazer—they married sisters—at his home, 17 Winter street, later occupied by Hon. Robert S. Rantoul.

**Sir Thomas Lipton** (1850-1931) also passed through Salem on his way to the Corinthian Yacht Club at Marblehead Neck on June 1, 1927. Sir Thomas was guest of honor at a dinner.

**Hon. George Bailey Loring** (1817-1891), member of Congress, Commissioner of Agriculture under Presidents Garfield and Arthur, and Minister to Portugal under Harrison, lived in the house, now much altered, 328 Essex street, and here on several occasions entertained President Pierce.

**Abiel Abbot Low** (1811-1893), eminent merchant of New York city, philanthropist and benefactor of Salem, was born on Federal street and began business on Essex street.

**Hon. Benjamin Lynde** (1666-1745), Chief Justice of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, 1729-1745; his son, bearing the same name and holding the same office; and Judge Andrew Oliver, son of Lieutenant-Governor Oliver, in turn occupied the house that formerly stood on the present site of the Lynde block, 145 Essex street.

**Gen. George B. McClellan** (1826-1885) passed the day in Salem, Feb. 5, 1863, was tendered a public reception at the Essex House in the morning, and later a breakfast at the mansion of George Peabody, 29 Washington Square, now the Bertram Home.

**Samuel McIntire** (1757-1811), eminent architect and carver in wood, lived at 29 Summer street. His shop was at the rear of his dwelling. Examples of his carving may be seen at the museum of the Essex Institute and all about Salem.

**Thomas Maule** (1645-1724), whose name is famous from his connection with the Quakers, built, about 1690, and occupied the house that formerly stood at 331 Essex street. He figures in the "House of the Seven Gables."

**Gen. James Miller** (1776-1851), the hero of Lundy Lane in the War of 1812, Governor of Arkansas, 1819-1825, and Collector of the port of Salem, 1825-1849, on whom the State of New York conferred a sword as a protector of her frontier, presented by Daniel Webster, lived at 180 Derby street, now the Old Ladies' Home.

**President James Monroe** (1758-1831) visited Salem, July 8, 1817, coming from Marblehead, and was present at the opening of the new Town House and Market. On the next day he lunched with Senator Silsbee at 94 Washington Square, dined at Secretary Crowninshield's, now the Old Ladies Home, and was entertained in the evening by Judge Story at his house, 26 Winter street. The next evening he attended a ball at the house of Stephen White, 31 Washington square, and left for the East on the following morning.

**Prof. Edward Sylvester Morse** (1838-1925), Director of Peabody Museum, 1880-1925, Prominent zoologist, lecturer, and authority on Japanese ceramics and ethnology. Member of many American and foreign scientific societies. Resided in Salem many years between 1880 and 1925. Professor of zoology at Bowdoin, 1871-4; at Imperial University, Tokio, Japan, 1877-1880. Decorated by Japanese Emperor with Order of the Rising Sun (1898); Order of the Sacred Treasure (1922).

**Rev. Edward Norris** (1579-1659) lived, from 1649 until his death in 1659, at what is now 90 Washington street. He was the pastor of the First Church, 1640-1659.

**Rev. Nicholas Noyes** (1647-1717), the pastor of the First Church at the time of the witchcraft delusion, lived at what is now 74 Washington street.

**Gen. Henry Kemble Oliver** (1800-1885) lived at 142 Federal street, and named his famous tune "Federal Street." He was mayor of Lawrence and later of Salem, being almost the organizer of Lawrence, in a municipal sense, for he was mayor in her first years and arranged the plan of her parks, public buildings, schools and churches, securing unity in the general design, and choosing the bells to be placed on engine-houses, cotton-mills, schools and churches, so that they made a harmonious chime. He was also at different times a teacher in Salem, organist of the North Church, musical composer and bass singer, adjutant general, and treasurer and receiver-general of the state, and treasurer of Lawrence Mills. He occupied the municipal chair of Salem on his eightieth birthday.

**Benjamin Peirce** (1809-1880), professor of Mathematics in Harvard College, was born in the Tontine Block, 29-35 Warren street, which was destroyed in the great fire of 1914. He was among the



Pepperrell

most eminent men of science in his day, and was at the head of the United States Coast Survey when he established the meridians which regulate and control the standard time of the continent. The late Lincoln Flagg Brigham, Chief Justice of the Superior Court, resided at No. 29 Warren street.

**Sir William Pepperrell** (1696-1759), the captor of Louisburg, was given a dinner July 4, 1746, in the old Town House.

**Rev. Hugh Peter** (1599-1660), the successor of Roger Williams as pastor of the First Church in Salem, lived in the ancient house that early occupied the site of the present Price block. He came here in 1636; became much interested in the development of the business and commerce of the colony, promoting the building of vessels, etc., and in 1641 went to England in behalf of those interests, becoming involved with Oliver Cromwell in the fight for the Commonwealth, and upon the Restoration was charged as an accessory in causing the death of the King, was executed at Charing Cross, Oct. 13, 1660, beheaded, drawn and quartered, and his head exposed on a pole on London Bridge.

**Hon. Stephen C. Phillips** (1801-1857) lived at Charter street and 29 Chestnut street, a member of Congress and second mayor of Salem and the first candidate of the Free Soil Party for Governor in 1856. He was deeply interested in education and gave his salary when mayor to build the grammar school named for him. He was a merchant and ship owner and owned the famous "St. Paul." He was much beloved in Salem and his early death by the burning of a vessel on the St. Lawrence caused general sorrow.

**Hon. Stephen H. Phillips** (1823-1897) born at Charter street, lived at 29 and 17 Chestnut street and 8 Hamilton street. Lawyer and jurist, the youngest man ever elected Attorney General of Massachusetts, afterwards Attorney General and minister of Foreign Affairs of the Kingdom of Hawaii.

**John Pickering, LL.D.** (1777-1846), the Greek lexicographer and famous linguist, lived at 18 Chestnut street, and died in Boston, where he was city solicitor. He was a son of Col. Timothy Pickering. The same house was also the residence of Nathaniel Hawthorne in 1846.

**Col. Timothy Pickering** (1745-1829), was born in the Pickering house, 18 Broad street. He was the most eminent member of the family, and among the conspicuous men of Revolutionary times. He was a militia colonel and adjutant-general, and quartermaster general of the Continental army. He was register of deeds and wrote papers on military drill, a few volumes of which appeared in print. He fought at the battles of Germantown and Brandywine; while as statesman he held the offices of Representative and Senator, and in Washington's cabinet, at different times, of Postmaster-General, Secretary of War, and Secretary of State. He died at 29 Warren street, in the Tontine block, which was destroyed in 1914 in the great fire. He founded the Essex Agricultural Society.

**President Franklin Pierce** (1804-1869) on several occasions was entertained by Hon. George B. Loring at his home, 328 Essex street.

**President James K. Polk** (1795-1849) passed through Salem, July 5, 1847, during a pouring rain, but did not leave his carriage to visit places of interest.

**Gov. Thomas Pownall** (1720-1805) visited Salem, Oct. 22, 1757, and was entertained at the Benjamin Pickman house, 165 Essex street.

**Prof. Frederick W. Putnam** (1839-1915), the first director of the Peabody Museum, Salem; eminent archæologist, naturalist, and museum director, was born at 99 Federal street.

**Judge Samuel Putnam** (1768-1853), judge of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, 1814-1842, occupied with his family the Assembly House, Federal street, until his removal to Boston in 1833.



**United States Senator Robert Rantoul** (1805-1852). Born in Beverly, he graduated from Harvard and began the practice of law in Salem in 1829. He played an important part in directing the policy of the Democratic party and he was appointed district attorney for Massachusetts in 1846. From 1837 when the Massachusetts State Board of Education was established until 1842, he was one of its most effective members. It was his opposition to the extension of slavery that led to his election to the United States Senate in 1851 to fill Webster's unexpired term. In 1851 the coalition between the Free Soilers and the Democrats sent him to the federal House of Representatives.

**Hon. Nathan Read** (1759-1849), member of Congress and inventor of a paddle-wheel for a boat, with which he experimented on Danvers River in 1789, lived in a house formerly occupying the site of the museum building of the Essex Institute. He also built the first iron-works at Waters River, Danvers, and invented machinery for cutting nails, there producing the first cut nails. A working model of his nail-cutting machine is in the museum of the Essex Institute.

**John Robinson** (1846-1925). Born in Salem and lifelong resident; trustee of Peabody Museum, Ropes Memorial, Salem Hospital, Salem Athenæum, and Salem East India Marine Society; botanist; keeper of Marine Room of Peabody Museum. Wrote: *Flora of Essex County*, *Ferns in Their Homes and Ours*, *Our Trees*, *Catalogue of Oriental Coins*, *Catalogue of Marine Room of Peabody Museum*, etc.

**John Rogers** (1829-1906), sculptor, whose character groups are everywhere familiar, was born in the Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse house that formerly stood (until 1915) on the site of the present Masonic Temple. (*See mention of his works in chapter on the Essex Institute*, p. 97.)

**President Franklin Delano Roosevelt** (1882-1945) came to Salem by train on June 17, 1938 and embarked at the Terminal wharf via the Presidential yacht Potomac for Nahant where he attended the wedding of his son John Roosevelt to Miss Anne

Clarke. Mr. Roosevelt, while campaigning for the presidency the first time, also made an address at the State Armory in Salem.

**President Theodore Roosevelt** (1858-1919), during the political campaign of 1912, from an automobile addressed an audience in Town House Square.

**Hon. Leverett Saltonstall** (1783-1845), first mayor of Salem (1836), and subsequently a member of Congress, lived at 41 Chestnut street.

**Samuel Shattuck** (1620-1689), the Quaker, lived at 185 Essex street. He was repeatedly fined and imprisoned and finally banished for his religious opinions. He sailed for England, leaving his home, family and property, had an audience with King Charles II, and obtained an order that the extreme measures taken against the Friends be at an end. He returned, and the cruelties of the colonial authorities were soon stopped.

**Gen. William T. Sherman** (1820-1891) was entertained by Judge Endicott in 1890, at his residence, 365 Essex street.

**United States Senator Nathaniel Silsbee** (1773-1850), Born at 69 Essex street, and lived for some years in the house 27 and 29 Daniels street. He subsequently lived at 94 Washington Square, East, which he built. Now, greatly changed in appearance, it is occupied by the Knights of Columbus. President Monroe was entertained here July 9, 1817; and at a later date Senators Henry Clay and Daniel Webster.

**Rev. Samuel Skelton** (1584-1634), the first pastor of the church in Salem, lived at what is now 14 Front street.

**Justice Joseph Story** (1779-1845) lived at 26 Winter street, in a house built by him in 1811. Here, Feb. 12, 1819, was born his son, William Wetmore Story, the noted author and sculptor. The cradle of Joseph and William W. Story is now at the Institute. General Lafayette was entertained here by Judge Story, Aug. 31, 1824.

Judge Story had an office, when he first came to Salem from Marblehead, on the second floor of the wooden Deliverance Parkman house, on the lot now occupied by the Shephard block, corner



of North and Essex streets. He also once had an office on Washington street, near Lynde. Finally he built a wooden office on the western side of his Winter street residence, on land later occupied by Charles Odell, and when the Story estate passed into other hands, this office was removed to Norman street, where it was used as an office by Dr. Benjamin Cox, and thence to Creek street.

**President William H. Taft** (1857-1930) spent the summers of 1910-12 at Beverly and frequently passed through the

streets of Salem in his automobile. On Oct. 4, 1912, he unveiled the bronze tablet at the Essex Institute in memory of the officers and men of the 1st Heavy Artillery, Mass. Vols., who served in the Civil War, and March 28, 1916, he delivered an address in Ames Memorial Hall.

**Benjamin Thompson**, later Count Rumford (1753-1814) was a clerk in a store at 314 Essex street, in 1766. He was born in Woburn and removed to Salem, where he was employed in the shop of John Appleton. The Essex Institute has a shop bill, receipted for Mr. Appleton, with Thompson's signature. He served in the British army during the latter part of the Revolutionary War, went to Bavaria, and in time became commander-in-chief of the Bavarian army, and was made Count Rumford. He was also eminent in science and as an author. A colossal statue to his memory ornaments one of the avenues in the city of Munich. Rumford ovens, invented by him, are to be found in many of the larger of the old Salem houses.

**Dr. John G. Treadwell** (1805-1856), a leading physician, lived at North street. He left the Treadwell farm at Topsfield to the Essex Agricultural Society.

**Rev. Charles W. Upham** (1802-1875), mayor of Salem, mem-

ber of Congress and author of the standard work on "Salem Witchcraft," lived at 313 Essex street.

**Rev. Jones Very** (1813-1880) lived and died at 154 Federal street. His house is now the property of the Essex Institute. His poems, first collected and published by Ralph Waldo Emerson, and later by James Freeman Clarke, William Page Andrews and sisters of Mr. Very, have elicited commendations from Dr. Channing, the elder Dana, Bryant, Hawthorne, and G. W. Curtis.

**Gen. Frederick T. Ward** (1831-1862) lived during his childhood at 96 Derby street, in the house of his grandfather Townsend. The life of General Ward was romantic and adventurous. He obtained his title by organizing and drilling Chinese troops, which, under his leadership, had such a success during the Tai Ping rebellion that they came to be known as "the ever victorious army." After his death a temple was dedicated to him, and, by Imperial mandate, he was worshipped as a deity. The English General Gordon was appointed to succeed him. At the Essex Institute is a memorial library (over 4,000 volumes) of books relating to China and the Chinese, together with personal relics of Ward and his Chinese wife, and the bullet by which he died in battle.

**George Washington** (1732-1799) was presented to the townspeople on the occasion of his visit to Salem, Oct. 29, 1789, from the balcony of the Town and Court House which formerly stood in the center of what is now Washington street, nearly opposite the present Tabernacle Church. He entered the town from Marblehead, escorted by Essex County troopers commanded by Lt. James Duncan of Haverhill. He passed from Lafayette street, then a rural lane with gates across it through Mill, High and Summer streets, to upper Federal street, and thence down Federal, reviewing the military, he repaired to the Court House. Here he stood on the balcony while odes were sung and welcomes tendered and the people shouted themselves hoarse. Senator Goodhue presented him the formal address. Here, too, his features were scanned by McIntire, who was seated at a window near by, and a profile bas-relief, ex-

ecuted in wood, which for years adorned the fine architectural gateway at the western entrance of the Common, was the result of a sketch then made. This is now at the Essex Institute. Later the President called at the house of Major Saunders, who commanded his bodyguard, the Cadets, and also at the Chase house, both in Federal street, and between seven and nine o'clock honored with his presence a ball at the Assembly House. There were guns and bells and flights of rockets, and the Court House was illuminated. The President passed the night in the mansion of Joshua Ward, a fine brick mansion house which was placed at his service by the family. He left for Beverly and the East in the morning. In his famous diary he made this entry: "Between 7 and 8 o'clock went to assembly, where there was at least a hundred handsome and well-dressed ladies . . . a great portion with much blacker hair than are usually seen in the Southern States."

There is evidence that Washington, when a young man, had been in Salem, on a visit to the Clarke family, and perhaps also during the siege of Boston.

**Daniel Webster** (1782-1852) frequently visited Salem in the course of his legal practice. In 1830 he was counsel in the famous White murder trial, and on other occasions was entertained by his colleague Senator Silsbee, 94 Washington Square, East. His son, Col. Daniel Fletcher Webster, who was killed at the second battle of Bull Run, was married at 31 Washington square.

**Roger Williams** (1599-1683), a successor of Mr. Higginson, lived in his house about midway between what is now the Daniel Low Company building and the Price block. He was a redoubtable champion of religious freedom, a man of such virile nature and persistency that banishment was adjudged necessary by the colonial magistrates at Boston. In a sick condition, Williams fled into the wilderness in the depth of winter, to the wigwam of Massasoit at Plymouth, where he remained for several months recovering from severe illness. He then went to what is now Rhode Island, secured a grant of territory, and founded a free state.

**President Woodrow Wilson** (1856-1924) came over with Mrs. Wilson from Beverly Sept. 11, 1917. He had arrived at Beverly in the presidential yacht Mayflower the night before and was a guest of Col. Edward M. House. The president and his party drove down to the House of the Seven Gables but did not go in. They returned that night to the Mayflower.

**Henry Winthrop** (1608-1630), son of Governor Winthrop, is supposed to have been drowned near the site of the North Bridge on July 2, 1630. He had arrived in the ship "Talbot," July 1, and the accident happened the following day while crossing the North River to visit an Indian settlement or camp.

**John Woodbury**, one of the old Planters, erected his home-  
stead at what is now 218 Essex street.

**Joseph E. Worcester** (1784-1865), compiler of Worcester's Dictionary, at one time conducted a private school in a building which formerly stood in what is now the front churchyard of the First Baptist Church. Hawthorne was one of his pupils.

## PORTRAITS

Lists of many of the portraits in the Essex Institute, the Peabody Museum and in some of the public buildings in Salem are given in the volumes, "Portraits in the Essex Institute" (published in 1936) and the "Additions to the Catalog of Portraits in the Essex Institute" (published in 1949-50); also in vol. 75 of the Essex Institute Historical Collections, and "Portraits of Shipmasters and Merchants in the Peabody Museum of Salem" (published in 1939).

## CHAPTER XIII

### NEIGHBORING PLACES OF INTEREST

#### BEVERLY

**United States Senator George Cabot** (1752-1823) lived at 104 Cabot street. He was offered the first portfolio of the Navy Department by President John Adams, was chosen to be biographer of Fisher Ames, an ancestor of Senator Lodge, and president, in 1814, of the Hartford Convention. Mr. Cabot entertained Washington at breakfast in this house, October 30, 1789, and thence accompanied his illustrious guest to visit, at North Beverly, the first cotton mill in America.

**Beverly Historical Society**, 117 Cabot street. John Cabot lived here, and on the first day of September, 1824, when Mr. Cabot had left town and the fine structure was occupied by banking and insurance offices, Lafayette was welcomed from its steps by Robert Rantoul in behalf of the town of Beverly. Edward Burley, the last occupant, bequeathed it to the Beverly Historical Society, and its collections of relics, pictures, manuscripts and books, may be seen at all hours of the day on application at the side door on Central street.

**City Hall**, 191 Cabot street, is a greatly transformed mansion house, built by Andrew Cabot, one of the three famous Cabot brothers, Beverly's great merchants of the post-revolutionary era, to whose energy Essex Bridge and the first cotton manufactures of America are due. In it, when afterwards owned by Col. Israel Thorndike, also a successful privateersman and most eminent merchant, were entertained Governor Gore on his famous eastern tour in 1809; President Monroe at breakfast, July 10, 1817, and Daniel Webster, at dinner, in August, 1830.

**First Cotton Mill in Massachusetts.** Near the corner of Cabot and Dodge streets, formerly stood a three-story brick structure,

built in 1788, in which was set up the first cotton manufactory in Massachusetts. A slate-stone slab, at the site of this mill, commemorates a visit made Oct. 30, 1789, by Washington, while on his eastern tour. It was burned down in 1828.

**The First Sunday School in America** was gathered in a modest house at the corner of Davis and Front streets, by two women, one of them the daughter of the famous privateersman of the Revolution, Hugh Hill, Andrew Jackson's cousin—the terror of British commerce—who lived in a more pretentious house a little further on.

**Oliver Wendell Holmes.** At the Farms Village, leaving the flagpole on the left, are two old houses on either hand, just before the railroad is reached; in the right-hand one of which Doctor Holmes lived when he dated his letters from "Beverly-Farms-by-the-Depot," and in the other lived Lucy Larcom, who entertained Whittier as a guest while getting a volume of verses for children through the press in August, 1875. On Hart street may be seen Doctor Holmes' last residence at Beverly Farms, also the summer resort of his son, the late Justice Holmes.

**Mingo Beach**, with its drifting mists and broad expanse of shingle, took its name from a negro slave of the ancient village. Here a schooner, run ashore under British guns, June 9, 1815, was fired by a boat's crew from a hostile man-of-war, and abandoned.

**Rev. Andrew P. Peabody** (1811-1893), the eminent divine, was born at 154-6 Cabot street.

**United States Senator Robert Rantoul** (1805-1952). Born at the corner of Lothrop and Washington streets. His grave is near by. The monument bears an epitaph from the pen of Sumner.

**South Meeting House** (Unitarian), Cabot street, possesses an ancient clock and a Paul Revere bell inscribed, "Revere and Sons, Boston, 1803." Near it, across the street, is the home of Nathan Dane, who sleeps in the cemetery hard by, commemorated by an inscription from the pen of Story. This point in Beverly was made the object of a vigorous cannonade by the blockading British

ship-of-war "Nautilus" of twenty guns, in 1775, when she got the range of the belfry on the old South Meeting House and attempted to enforce the surrender of an escaping privateersman by making a target of the town.

## DANVERS

**Danvers Historical Society**, 11 Page street, owns the Col. Jeremiah Page house, built about 1754. Here Madam Page's tea-party was held on the roof, because they had agreed to use no tea under their roof, which story was told in the poem, "A Gambrel Roof," by Lucy Larcom. Here General Gage had his business office while living at the Hooper house in the summer of 1774. A new Memorial Hall, erected in 1930, stands next to this house. It contains an interesting collection of old china, Revolutionary relics, furniture, MSS., etc., with a number of portraits, including those of Dr. Amos Putnam, 1765 or earlier, the poet Whittier, Gen. Moses Porter, Rev. Alfred P. Putnam, and others.

**Read-Porter House.** On the right, driving from Salem, at Waters River, was the iron mill and nail factory of Dr. Nathan Read, in 1789. He invented machinery for cutting nails, and produced there the first cut nails. He also made portable steam engines. The fine country residence he built for himself is on the left on an eminence some distance from the street. In 1789 he successfully tested in the river a paddle-wheel boat invented and built by him, starting from his iron mill at Danversport and reaching Essex Bridge. On board were John Hancock, Nathan Dane, Rev. Dr. Prince, and Dr. Holyoke of Salem.

**Danvers State Hospital for the Insane**, Newbury street, was erected at a cost of about \$1,500,000. The view from Hathorne Hill is one of the finest in Essex County. The building is open on Tuesdays and Saturdays, but the grounds are always open. Lawrence busses pass the building.

**Gov. John Endecott's** "Orchard Farm," Endecott street, still preserves the pear tree set out about 1632. This tree is claimed

to be the oldest cultivated fruit tree in New England. It still bears fruit.

**Folly Hill** is approached from Liberty street or Route 128, and has been described by Hawthorne. It is crowned by the large reservoir of the Salem Water Works, which destroyed the former cellar walls of a famous mansion, built (1740-1745) by the Hon. William Browne, loyalist, a public-spirited citizen of great wealth, whose descendants removed to Virginia and inter-married with the Washingtons. It contained the finest ballroom in this region. It was popularly known as "Browne's Folly." The view is unsurpassed.

**Judge Samuel Holten** (1738-1816), Judge of Probate, a famous Revolutionary patriot who served for a short time as President of the Continental Congress, lived at the corner of Centre and Holten streets. The house has been purchased and restored by Gen. Israel Putnam Chapter, D. A. R. Admission fee.

**Site of the Hooper-Collins House** at the end of Collins street. The mansion house which was removed to Kalorama Circle Washington, D. C., in 1935, was built by "King" Hooper, and in recent years was known as "The Lindens." General Gage established his headquarters in this house in 1774, just after he was appointed by the King as Governor of the Province, with instructions to transfer the Province capitol to Salem. In the field opposite was the camp of two companies of Leslie's 64th British Regiment, afterwards in the expedition to Salem, Feb. 26, 1775.

**Samuel Fowler House**, built 1809, a fine example of brick houses of that period, purchased in 1912 by the Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities, and open to visitors. Admission fee.

**Col. Israel Hutchinson**, a gallant officer in the Revolution, lived in front of what is now the Danversport railroad station. A monument marks the spot.

"**Oak Knoll**," the home of the poet Whittier for about fifteen years, is beyond the burial ground on Summer street.

**Peabody Institute**, Sylvan street. This edifice was erected in

1892, to replace the former building that had been destroyed by fire. The Public Library and a hall are in this building, which was endowed by the philanthropist, George Peabody of London. Not far from the Institute on Holten street, stands the house which was long the summer home of Judge Samuel Putnam, supplanting the house in which he was born on his father's 200-acre farm.

**Gen. Isreal Putnam**, the Revolutionary hero, was born in the house at 431 Maple street.

**Hon. James Putnam** was born beyond the old cemetery on Summer street. He was the last Attorney-General of Massachusetts under the Crown, Judge of the Supreme Court of New Brunswick, and, said President Adams, "the best lawyer in America." A covered well just beyond the birthplace of James Putnam, in the field to the left, is near the site of the home of John Putnam, Sr. The road passes over the site.

**St. John's Preparatory School**, Roman Catholic, occupies several fine brick buildings on Spring and Summer streets. The main building was erected by Jacob Spring, and is built of brick and embodies forty-two varieties of stone picked up on the estate.

**Training Field**, corner Centre and Ingersoll streets, was, in 1694, donated by Nathaniel Ingersoll to the inhabitants as "a training place forever." The town of Danvers, in 1894, set a granite boulder on the "green," with a suitable inscription thereon.

**First Church**, corner Centre and Hobart streets. This has been the meeting-house site of this parish since 1702. The earlier and witchcraft meeting-house stood about seven hundred feet north-easterly on the other side of Hobart street, then called "Meeting House Lane," just easterly of Forest Street. Near by, on Centre street, may be seen the Parson Wadsworth residence, built about 1784. Rev. Samuel Parris, the witchcraft pastor of Salem Village, lived in the parsonage which formerly stood about three hundred feet from the Parson Wadsworth house. Here the delusion began.

**George Jacobs**, who was executed for witchcraft in 1692, lived in a house still standing, much decayed, in the fields easterly from

the foot of Gardner's Hill. His remains are buried in the field between the house and the street.

**The Rebecca Nurse Burying Ground**, off Collins street, is in a field among some pine trees. Here is the monument, with its inscription composed by the poet Whittier, erected to the memory of Rebecca Nurse, who was executed for witchcraft in 1692. This field is a part of the ancient Nurse farm, and the old house in which Mrs. Nurse lived, said to have been built in 1636, is seen to the northeast of the hill. The house and burying ground are now owned by the Nurse Memorial Association. The house has been restored and seventeenth century furnishings added. Entrance from Pine street. Admission.

**Wadsworth Burying Ground**, Summer street. Here are the graves of Elizabeth, wife of Rev. Samuel Parris of witchcraft notoriety; of Parson Wadsworth, of the Clarkes, Hobarts, and many of the Putnams. This is the oldest cemetery in Danvers, and was originally the First Parish cemetery.

#### PEABODY

**Lexington Monument**, corner Main and Washington streets, a granite monument erected in memory of the men from this town (then Danvers) who fell in the battles of Lexington and Concord, April 19, 1775. The monument was dedicated by Gov. Edward Everett. The famous Bell Tavern formerly stood opposite.

**Peabody Historical Society**, 35 Washington street, organized in 1896, has a collection of historical relics and curiosities.

**Peabody Institute**, 64 Main street, is a public library founded with a bequest of \$200,000 by George Peabody of London. Here is deposited a portrait of Queen Victoria painted on enamel, the colors being burned in and backed by a sheet of gold. Sixteen firings were needed to perfect the work. The picture was a gift from the Queen to Mr. Peabody in recognition of his beneficence to the poor of London. The Sutton Reference Library, in the same building, was founded in 1869 by Mrs. Eliza Sutton, as a memorial to her son, Eben Dale Sutton.

**George Peabody**, the world-renowned philanthropist, was born in the house numbered 205 Washington street. A tablet marks the front of the house. The name of the town, South Danvers, was changed to Peabody, in his honor, in 1868.

**William Frederick Poole**, the first librarian of the Newberry Library at Chicago, was born in Salem, Dec. 24, 1821. The boundary lines having since been changed, the house is now within the limits of Peabody, and is second below Pierpont street—133 Main street. Mr. Poole had been librarian of the Boston Athenæum, Cincinnati Public Library, and the Chicago Public Library, and was the compiler of Poole's Index and a frequent contributor to historical and literary papers.

**Ship Rock.** The largest and most noted boulder of Essex County is Ship Rock, in Peabody. (*See Historic Landmarks*, p. 170).

“**Eliza Wharton**” the “Coquette,” Richard Derby, the patriot, Jones Very the poet, and five of the Danvers minute men who fell at the Battle of Lexington lie buried in the ancient cemetery at the dividing line between Peabody and Salem.

### MARBLEHEAD

This quaint old town is very enjoyable to anyone who appreciates the picturesque. Many of the streets are crooked beyond description, reminding those who have lived abroad of the older parts of Naples. The earliest houses are as striking in appearance and as queerly constructed as the streets. It is an old colonial town, entirely unlike any other place in the land. It was settled largely, while a part of Salem, by fishermen from the Channel Islands, and to this day French Huguenot names, though often corrupted, are far from rare among them. They are a most hospitable people and famous fighters, and during the Revolutionary War had a whole regiment of their own under arms, which furnished oarsmen in Washington's passage of the Delaware, and retreat from Long Island. A pleasant hour may be spent in driving about the streets, and the people, who are proud of their town,

are always ready to show the stranger its queer features and points of historic interest. In the summer time the harbor is the rendezvous of the yachts of the leading clubs cruising along the coast, and the regattas of the Eastern and Corinthian clubs are social events of the season.

---

**Abbot Hall** is on the Common, at the junction of Washington and Lee streets. Several fine paintings are in the reading room, including "The Spirit of '76," by Willard.

**Fort Sewall**, overlooking the harbor at the extreme northeastern end of Front street, was built in 1742, and has been garrisoned in all the wars in which the country has been engaged. In 1922 the government transferred the title to the town of Marblehead.

**Fountain Inn**, scene of the romantic story of Agnes Surriage, was formerly located on Orne street, the well being all that remains of this old-time hostelry.

**Elbridge Gerry**, the only Essex County native who signed the Declaration of Independence as a delegate from Massachusetts, a Vice-President of the United States and Governor of Massachusetts, was born in a three-story house on Washington street nearly opposite the old North Church. The system by which political districts have been constituted to benefit the party in power, which was first applied while he was governor, has been called the "Gerrymander."

**Glover House**, on Glover street, its front facing State street, was the home of Gen. John Glover, the leader of the "Amphibious Regiment of Marblehead fishermen," a detachment of which rowed Washington across the Delaware, Dec. 25, 1776. The house has been restored and is used as a private residence.

**"King" Hooper House**, Hooper street, built by Robert Hooper, one of the wealthiest merchants of New England, before the Revolution. There is a large banquet hall constructed like a ship's cabin, in the third story. This is now the home of the Marblehead Arts Association.

**Marblehead Historical Society**, 169 Washington street, now owns and occupies the Lee mansion, built in 1770 by Col. Jeremiah

Lee, a leading merchant, and is one of the finest examples of architecture of its period. Here Washington, Lafayette and Andrew Jackson have been entertained. It now contains a valuable and interesting collection of furniture, china, and historical relics. Admission fee.

**Capt. James Mugford**, of Revolutionary fame, lived in the house at the corner of Mugford and Back streets, and has a granite monument on Elm street.

**Old Burying Hill**, Orne street, the view from whose summit is unsurpassed, contains the graves of many of the early settlers, as well as persons of influence and distinction who have lived here. Many of the gravestones are curiously cut, and the inscriptions of interest.

**Major John Pedrick House**, 52 Washington street, built in 1756, home of a patriot during the Revolutionary War. He was a wealthy ship-owner, with twenty or more vessels engaged in foreign trade. Open to the public.

**St. Michael's Church**, (Episcopal), Summer street, was built in 1714, the frame and all the materials used in its construction being brought from England. The ancient reredos and chandelier still remain. It is the oldest Episcopal church edifice in New England.

**Justice Joseph Story** was born at 104 Washington street, his father, Dr. Elisha Story, a distinguished physician, having come from Boston, where he had figured as one of the "Sons of Liberty" in the "Boston Tea Party."

**Town House**, Washington street, near the head of State street, erected in 1727. Here for nearly 200 years town meetings were held and its walls have re-echoed the voices of the patriots as they appealed to the citizens in the days before the Revolution.

**Commodore Samuel Tucker**, daring naval officer of the Revolution, lived on Prospect street. It is said that he took more prizes and was victorious in more sea-fights than almost any naval hero of the age.

## INDEX

---

Abbot, Madeline, 180.  
Gen. Stephen, 207.  
Mrs. Walter L., 194.  
Abbott, John Emery, 179.  
Academy Hall, 158.  
Adams, Pres., John, 44, 170, 207.  
Pres. John Quincy, 114.  
Samuel, 138.  
Aged and Destitute Women,  
Assn. for Relief of, 189.  
Airports, 2.  
Allen, Charles F., 193.  
Lt. Pickering D., 191.  
William, 207.  
Ames, George L., 125, 158.  
Anderson, R. C., 146.  
Andrew, John, 159.  
Gov. John Albion, 159, 207.  
Andrew-Safford House, 50, 159.  
Andrewe, Daniel, 23, 24.  
Andrews, William Page, 223.  
Andros, Sir Edmond, 164.  
Appleton, John, 222.  
Arnold, Gen. Benedict, 44.  
Arthur, Pres. Chester A., 207.  
Prince, 133.  
Assembly Hall, 159.  
Assembly House, 50.  
Athenæum, Salem, 150.  
Avery, John, 178.

Bacon, Samuel, 170.  
Bainbridge, Commodore, William, 122, 189.  
Baker's Id., 202.  
Balch, Frank L., 189.  
Bancroft, Lt. George C., 191.  
Barker, Elizabeth G., 194.  
Barnard, Rev. Thomas, 168, 179, 207.

Barr, Capt. James, 168.  
Batchelder, Capt. George W., 191.  
Bates, Cong. George J., 172, 210.  
Beadle, Thomas, 160.  
Beadle's Tavern, 160.  
Becket, Retire, 42.  
Becket House, 160.  
Belcher, Gov. Jonathan, 207.  
Bell, Alexander Graham, 195, 207.  
Benson, Frank W., 91.  
Bentley, Rev. William, 91, 185, 199, 208.  
Bentley School, 156.  
Bernard, Gov., 175.  
Bertram, Capt. John, 42, 148, 180, 190, 192, 194, 199, 208.  
John, 184.  
Mary, 184.  
Bertram Home for Aged Men, 172, 190.  
Beveridge, Mrs. Albert J., 93.  
Bigelow, Walter K., 187.  
Bishop, Bridget, 27, 94, 141.  
Blackall, Clarence H., 142.  
Blake, George Harrison, 199.  
Mrs. Nancy C., 199.  
Blubber Hollow, 14.  
Blythe, Benjamin, 91, 96.  
Samuel, 99.  
Boardman House, 160.  
Bond, Richard, 140.  
Booth, Elizabeth, 17.  
Borah, Sen. William E., 208.  
Bowditch, Dr. Nathaniel, 81, 92, 118, 208.  
Bradstreet, Gov. Simon, 9, 196, 198, 208.  
Brazer, John, 179.

Briggs, Elijah, 42.  
 Enos, 42, 123, 204.

Brigham, Judge Lincoln F., 179, 208, 218.

Broad Street Burial Ground, 196.

Broadhead, Elinor, 194.

Brooks, Rev. Charles T., 208.  
 Bishop Phillips, 180.

Brookhouse, Capt. Robert, 186, 189.

Brown, Dr. Benjamin F., 62.  
 Ephraim, 170.  
 Joshua, 42.

Browne, Samuel, 178.  
 Col. William, 153, 154, 164, 165, 178, 229.

Brownell, Lieut., 134.

Bryant, Gridley J. F., 156, 178.

Buffington, Capt. Nehemiah, 34.

Bulfinch, Charles, 133, 190.

Burke, Lt. Commdr. John, 131.

Burley, Edward, 226.

Burnett, Gov. William, 209.

Burroughs, Rev. George, 27, 28.

Bus Terminal, 1.

Buxton, Major Seth S., 191.

Cabot, Andrew, 226.  
 Sen. George, 13, 158, 209, 226.  
 John, 226.  
 Joseph, 46, 160.

Cabot-Endicott-Low-Ives-Parker House, 46, 50.

Cabot House, 160.

Cape Ann, 5.

Carlile, Rev. Thomas, 170.

Carlton, Rev. Michael, 189, 193.

Carnes, Capt. Jonathan, 37, 113, 117, 120.

Carpenter, Benjamin, 120.

Carrier, Martha, 27.

Castiglioni, Count, 44.

Catta Id., 202.

Chamberlain, Sir Austen, 160.  
 Rt. Hon. Joseph, 160, 211.

Charles I., King, 143.

Charles II, King, 8, 221.

Charter Street Burial Ground, 196.

Chase, Justice Salmon P., 209.

Checkley, Andrew, 27.

Cheever, George B., 181.

Choate, Joseph H., 209.  
 Joseph H., monument, 173.  
 Rufus, 81, 177, 209.

Churches

- Branch, 180.
- Calvary Baptist, 175.
- Crombie Street, 2, 177.
- Cong. Macazikay Hadas (synagogue), 187.
- Cong. Sons of Jacob, 187.
- First 2, 6, 177.
- First Baptist, 2, 175.
- First Church of Christ Scientist, 2, 179.
- First Spiritualist, 2, 179.
- First Universalist, 2, 187.
- French Evangelical, 2, 175.
- Friends, 179.
- Grace, 2, 180.
- Immaculate Conception, 2, 181.
- Jewish Synagogues, 2.
- Lafayette Street Methodist, 2, 182.
- St. Anne's, 2, 182.
- St. James, 2, 182.
- St. John the Baptist 2, 182.
- St. John Ukrainian Greek Catholic, 2, 183.
- St. Joseph's, 2, 183.
- St. Mary's, 2, 182, 183.
- St. Nicholas (Russian Greek Ortho.), 2, 183.
- St. Peter's, 2, 183.
- St. Thomas, the Apostle, 2, 185.

Churches  
 Second, 2, 185.  
 Tabernacle 2, 186.  
 Wesley Methodist, 187.

Churchill, Sarah, 17.

Clark, Rev. DeWitt S., 187.  
 John, 184.

Clarke, Anne, 221.  
 James Freeman, 223.

Clay, Sen. Henry, 191, 209, 221.

Clementi piano, 99.

Cleveland, Pres. Grover, 211.

Coast Guard Airport, 2.

Coast Guard Air Station, 174.

Coggin, Elizabeth W., 194.

Cogswell, Gen. William, 209.

Common, The, 200.

Conant, Roger, 5, 173, 177.  
 Roger, statue, 173.

Connick, Charles J., 199.

Connolly, Horace, 69.

Constable, William Kerin, 135.

Cook, James, 37.  
 Capt. Samuel, 160.

Cook-Oliver House, 160.

Coolidge, Pres. Calvin, 209.

Copley, John S., 170, 210.

Corey, Giles, 19, 20, 26, 210.  
 Martha, 19, 27, 94.

Corné, Michele Felice, 122.

Corwin, Sheriff George, 27, 171, 196.  
 Jonathan, 18, 22, 23, 24, 26.

Court Houses, 136.

Cox, Dr. Benjamin, 83.

Cranch, Justice, Richard, 170.

Crehore, Benjamin, 103.

Cromwell, Mary, 198.  
 Philip, 196.

Crowninshield, Benjamin W., 13, 70, 81, 189, 210.

Clifford, 127.

Francis B. Gallery, 115.

Crowninshield, Capt. George, 42, 70, 181, 200.  
 Capt. Jacob, 13, 34, 70.  
 Mrs. Louise DuP., 115.

Crowninshield's Wharf, 162.

Curtis, G. W., 223.

Curwen, George Rea, 92.

Custom House, 152.

Daland, John Tucker, 83.

Dane, Nathan, 81, 227, 228.

Dawes, Vice Pres. Charles G., 210.

Dearborn, Capt. Charles A., 191.  
 Gen. Henry, 189.

Derby, Elias Hasket, 34, 46, 116, 119, 154, 162, 172.

Elias Hasket, 2nd, 201.

Capt. John, 162.

Perley, 85.

Capt. Richard, 46, 162, 169, 172, 232.

Derby, Richard House, 161.  
 Samuel, 36.

Derby street, 32.

Derby Wharf, 12, 162.

DeStael, Mme., 103.

Devereux, Capt. James, 37.

Deyo, Rear Admiral Morton L., 172.

Dickson, Walter Scott, 198.

Dodge, F. Waldo, 125.

"Dolliver Romance," 63.

Dorchester Company, 5.

Downing, Emmanuel, 83.

Driver, William, 120.

Duncan, Lt. James, 223.

Earle, Maj. R. E. W., 135.

Eastern Railroad, 155.

East India House, 1.

East India Marine Hall, 158.

East India Marine Society, 113.

Easty, Mary, 27.  
 Eaton, John D., 190.  
 Edison phonograph, 99.  
 Edward VII, King, 210.  
 Edward VIII, King, 211.  
 Elks, Order of, 190.  
 Ellsworth, Col. Elmer E., 134.  
 Emerson, J. S., 129.  
     Ralph Waldo, 223.  
 Emmerton, Caroline O., 70.  
     Jennie (Bertram), 194.  
 Empire Theatre, 1, 158.  
 Endecott, Gov. John, 6, 9, 75, 91,  
     93, 94, 177, 211, 228.  
 Endicott, William C., 160, 211.  
     Mrs. William C., 185.  
 English, Philip, 184.  
 English, Philip House, 68.  
 Eshing, 119.  
 Essex Bridge, 163.  
 Essex Hist. Soc., 124.  
 Essex House, 164.  
 Essex Co. Law Library, 151.  
 Essex Co. Nat. Hist. Soc., 124.  
 Essex Institute, 5, 9, 43, 44, 52,  
     79, 109, 114, 124, 138, 169.  
 Eveleth, Madame Sylvester, 93.  
 Everett, Gov. Edward, 231.  
  
 Family Service Assn., 190.  
 "Fanshawe," 60.  
 Farmer, Prof. Moses G., 211.  
 Father Mathew Catholic Total  
     Abstinence Soc., 190.  
 Father Mathew statue, 173.  
 Felt. Rev. Joseph B., 81, 211.  
 Fenollosa, M., Fund, 200.  
 Field, Mrs. Marshall, 93.  
 Fields, James T., 62.  
 Fitch, Mrs. Timothy, 90.  
 Flint, Samuel, 141.  
 Folger, Matthew, 127.  
 Folly Hill, 229.

Forbes, Charles, 40.  
 Forest River Park, 201.  
 Forrester, Mrs. Charlotte S., 90.  
     Simon, 163, 172.  
 Fountain Inn, 233.  
 Fowler, Augustus, 125.  
     Samuel, House, 229.  
 Fragonard Fils, 103.  
 Fraher, Rev. Edward J., 185.  
 Franks, Rev. James P., 180.  
     Mrs. James P., 180.  
 Friends' Cemetery, 198.  
 Frothingham, James, 91.  
     Frye, Col. Peter, 138.  
 Fuller, Enoch, 141.  
  
 Gage, Gov. Thomas, 137, 153,  
     167, 175, 212, 229.  
 Gallows Hill, 164.  
 Gallows Hill Park, 202.  
 Gardner, Capt. John, 101.  
     Capt. Joseph, 9, 83.  
 Gedney, Maj. Bartholomew, 26.  
     John, 171.  
 Gerry, Elbridge, 233.  
 Gibbs, John, 184.  
 Gilmore, Patrick S., 134.  
 Glover, Gen. John, 233.  
     House, 233.  
 Good, Sarah, 18, 19, 27.  
 Goodell, Abner C., 152.  
 Goodhue, Albert, Jr., 193.  
     Mrs. Albert, 194.  
     Sen. Benjamin, 13, 212, 223.  
     William, 164.  
 Gordon, Gen., 223.  
 Gore, Gov. Christopher, 226.  
 Gove, Mrs. Aroline C., 155.  
 Gower, Ann, 93.  
 Grant, Clement R., 149.  
     Pres. Ulysses S., 212.  
 Gray, John M., 155.  
     Lt. Gov. William, 35, 164, 189,  
         212, 214.

Great Misery Id., 202.  
Greenlawn Cemetery, 198.  
Griggs, Dr. William, 18.  
Grimshawe House, 13, 63.  
Gustav VI, King, 212.

**H**ale, Rev. John, 28.  
  Mrs. John, 28.  
Haller-Daniels House, 1.  
Hamilton, Alexander, 44, 90, 158,  
  212.  
  Gail, 87.  
Hamilton Hall, 158.  
Hammond Clock Collection, 95.  
Hancock, John, 85, 138, 139, 215,  
  228.  
Harada, Dr. Jiro, 132.  
Haraden, Capt. Jonathan, 212.  
Hardy, Joseph, 42.  
Harmony Grove Cemetery, 199.  
Harrington, Hon. Joseph B., 172.  
Harrison, Pres. Benjamin, 212.  
Hartford Convention, 158.  
Hathorne, Col. John, 18, 26, 64,  
  198.  
  William, 177.  
Hawkes, Capt. Benjamin, 163.  
Hawthorne, Julian, 56, 61.  
  Monument, 174.  
  Nathaniel, 13, 54, 56, 172, 213,  
    218.  
  Rose, 56.  
  Sophia (Peabody), 213.  
  Una, 56.  
Healey, G. P. A., 55.  
Higginson, Rev. Francis, 6, 213.  
  Rev. John, 198.  
  Col. John, 31, 178.  
  Nathaniel, 201.  
  Sarah, 178.  
High School, 156.  
Highland Park, 202.  
Hill, Capt. Hugh, 150, 227.

Hiller, Joseph, 71.  
Hobbs, Abigail, 94.  
Hodges, Lt. Col. John, 191.  
Holiday, Henry, 180.  
Hollingsworth, Richard, 42.  
Holmes, Dr. O. W., 14, 227.  
Holten, Judge Samuel, 229.  
Holyoke, Dr. Edward A., 79, 92,  
  213, 228.  
Hook, George, 96.  
Hooper, Benjamin, 45.  
  Robert, 233.  
Hooper-Collins House, 229.  
Hooper, King, Robert, House,  
  233.  
Hotel Hawthorne, 1, 166.  
Hotel Lafayette, 1.  
House, Col. Edward M., 225.  
Howard Street, 180.  
Howard Street Burial Ground,  
  200.  
Howe, Elizabeth, 27.  
Howes, William Burley, 83.  
Hubbard, Elizabeth, 17.  
Hull, Capt. Isaac, 122.  
Hunt, T. Frank, 86.  
  William M., 141.  
Hutchinson, Col. Israel, 229.  
  Gov. Thomas, 175.  
Hytron Radio & Electronics Co.,  
  3.

**I**ngersoll, Horace, 69.  
  Capt. Jonathan, 34.  
  Nathaniel, 230.  
  Susan, 65.

**J**ackson, Pres. Andrew, 135, 171,  
  213.  
  Dr. Hall, 202.  
  Russell Leigh, 89, 171, 210.  
Jacobs, George, 25, 27, 230.  
Jenks, Joseph, 43.

Johnson, Lady Arbella, 196.  
 Mrs. Emery W., 179.  
 Reverdy, 181.  
 Rev. Samuel, 213.  
 Johonnot, George, 106.  
 Juniper Point, 204.  
 Kernwood Country Club, 191.  
 Kilham & Hopkins, 156.  
 Kimball, Mrs. C. B., 149.  
 Fiske, 51.  
 Kimball House, 50.  
 Kitson, Henry H., 173.  
 Knights of Columbus, 191.  
 Kossuth, Louis, 165, 214.  
 LaFarge, John, 179.  
 Lafayette, Marquis de, 135, 214.  
 Lambert, Mary, 196.  
 Lamqua, 119.  
 Lander, Brig. Gen. Frederick W.,  
 191, 196, 215.  
 Louisa, 185.  
 Larcom, Lucy, 87, 227.  
 Lathrop, Mrs. Rose Hawthorne,  
 14.  
 Capt. Thomas, 8.  
 Lawrence, Capt. 162, 200.  
 Lea, James Henry, 85.  
 Leach, Lawrence, 177.  
 Ledge Hill Park, 202.  
 Lee, Fort, 204.  
 Col. Jeremiah, 234.  
 Lefaver, Menard, 185.  
 Leslie, Col., 167.  
 Leverett, Gov. John, 91, 93.  
 Lewis, Mercy, 17.  
 Liberty Hill, 202.  
 Lincoln, Benjamin, 138, 139.  
 Gov. Levi, 215.  
 Lindall, Timothy, 196.  
 "The Lindens," 137.  
 Lipton, Sir Thomas, 215.

Little, Hon. David Mason, 179,  
 214.  
 Mrs. David M., 179.  
 Philip, 91.  
 Little Misery Id., 202.  
 Longfellow, Henry W., 69.  
 Lord, William, 6.  
 Loring, Augustus Peabody, Jr.,  
 115.  
 George Bailey, 215.  
 Rosamond Bowditch, 115.  
 Louise, Queen, 212.  
 Low, Abiel Abbot, 135, 216.  
 Daniel & Company, 4.  
 Lowell Id., 202.  
 Ludlow, Lieut., 162, 200.  
 Lynde, Justice Benjamin, 198,  
 207, 216.  
 Lyndhurst, Lord, 210.  
 Manning, Mrs. Elizabeth, 57.  
 Richard, 57, 66.  
 "Marble Faun," 56, 57.  
 Marine Society Bethel, 166.  
 Martin, Susanna, 27.  
 Mason, Capt. David, 168.  
 Lowell, 96.  
 Masonic Temple, 136, 191.  
 Massachusetts Bay Company, 6.  
 Mather, Cotton, 28, 64, 196.  
 Nathaniel, 64, 196.  
 Mathew, Rev. Theobald, 173.  
 Maule, Thomas, 99, 179, 216.  
 MacKay, Donald, 123.  
 McClellan, Gen. George B., 165,  
 215, 216.  
 McGovern, Lt. Comdr. Lawrence  
 H., 172.  
 McIntire, Joseph, 170.  
 Samuel, 51, 73, 96, 106, 119,  
 139, 155, 163, 170, 201, 216.  
 McMullan, Capt. William, 94,  
 105.

Merritt, Lt. Col. Henry, 191.  
Midmar, R. & Son, 182.  
Mikkelsen, Rosamond, 174.  
Miller, E. F., 42.  
    Gen. James, 70, 189, 199, 216.  
Millet, Charles, 40.  
Missud, Jean, 134.  
Monroe, Pres. James, 133, 154,  
    191, 216, 221.  
More, Capt. Richard, 152, 196.  
Morse, Albert P., 125.  
    Edward S., 131, 217.  
Morris, George E., 125.  
Mugford, Capt. James, 234.  
  
Narbonne House, 45, 166.  
Naservanjee, 119.  
Naumkeag, 5.  
Naumkeag Steam Cotton Co., 3.  
Naval Reserve Training Center,  
    172.  
Neal, Capt. D. A., 156.  
New Essex House, 1.  
Nichols, Margaret, 194.  
    Mary E., 194.  
Norman, John, 196.  
Norris, Rev. Edward, 178, 217.  
North Bridge, 10, 167.  
North Salem Community, 2, 175.  
North Shore Children's Friend  
Soc'y., 193.  
North Shore Golf and Tennis  
Club, 191.  
Now and Then Assn., 192.  
Now and Then Hall, 158.  
Noyes, Rev. Nicholas, 28, 217.  
Nurse Burying Ground, 231.  
Nurse, Rebecca, 20, 27.  
  
Oak Knoll, 229.  
O'Connell, Cardinal, 183.

Old Planters, 6.  
Oliver, Judge Andrew, 216.  
    Dr. B. Lynde, 60, 184.  
    Gen. Henry K., 135, 160, 217.  
Onslow, Sir Arthur, 184.  
Orne, Joseph, 148.  
Orr, Richard, 123.  
Osburn, Sarah, 18, 19.  
Osgood, Charles, 55, 91, 135, 199.  
    Elizabeth S., 194.  
    Mrs. Stuart, 194.  
Otis, James, 73.  
  
Page, Col. Jeremiah, 228.  
Paramount Theatre, 1, 158.  
Parker, Alice, 27.  
    Francis Tuckerman, 193.  
    George S., 3.  
    Mrs. George S., 160.  
    Mary, 27.  
Parker Brothers, Inc., 3.  
Parkman Deliverance House, 68.  
Parris, Elizabeth, 17.  
    Rev. Samuel, 17, 18, 230.  
Parton, James, 87.  
Payson, Edward H., 179.  
Peabody, Rev. Andrew P., 227.  
    Elizabeth, 63, 76.  
    Lt. Francis, 100, 179, 191.  
    Col. Francis, 133.  
    George, 82, 93, 113, 133, 199,  
        230, 231, 232.  
    Col. George, 190.  
    Capt. Joseph, 36, 38, 85, 119,  
        133, 190, 199.  
    Joseph A., 133.  
    Martha, 179.  
Peabody House (Col. George),  
    51.  
Peabody Institute, 231.  
Peabody Museum, 33, 44, 113,  
    114, 158.

Peabody, Dr. Nathaniel, 63.  
 S. Endicott, 191.  
 Sophia Amelia, 56, 63.  
 Pedrick, Maj. John, 168, 234.  
 Peele, Jonathan, 37.  
 Peirce, Benjamin, 217.  
 Jerathmeel, 106.  
 Peirce-Nichols House, 51, 106, 169.  
 Pepperrell, Sir William, 91, 137, 218.  
 Pequot House, 155.  
 Perkins, Capt. Thomas, 193.  
 Perry, Commodore Oliver H., 189.  
 Peter, Rev. Hugh, 7, 178, 186, 218.  
 Peterson, Bishop John B., 185.  
 Phelps, Elizabeth Stuart, 87.  
 Philip, King, 8.  
 Phillips, Mrs. George, 196.  
 J. Duncan, 10, 37, 155, 172.  
 Mrs. Stephen, 194.  
 Stephen C., 37, 81, 156, 162, 199, 218.  
 Stephen H., 128, 152, 218.  
 Stephen Willard, 89, 130, 151.  
 Philosophical Library, 150.  
 Phips, Sir William, 10, 26.  
 Pickman, Col. Benjamin, 44, 57, 81, 169.  
 Clarke, Gayton, 169.  
 Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse Est., 169.  
 Pickman-Derby-Brookhouse mansion, 47.  
 Pickman House, 44, 52.  
 Pickering fireback, 99.  
 Pickering, Fort, 204.  
 Pickering House, 43, 169.  
 Pickering, John, 43, 169, 177, 218.  
 Col. Timothy, 13, 44, 79, 84, 91, 153, 196, 218, 219.  
 Peirce, Pres. Franklin, 219.  
 Piemonte, Rev. Peter M., 183.  
 Pingree, Hon. David, 101.  
 David, Jr., 101, 150.  
 Mrs. Harold B., 194.  
 Pingree House, 51, 101, 169.  
 Pinkham, Lydia E., 155.  
 Pioneers' Village, 143.  
 Pitcher, Moll, 92.  
 Plaza Theatre, 159.  
 Plummer, Caroline, 148, 150, 192, 196.  
 Ernestus Augustus, 150.  
 Farm School, 192.  
 Hall, 150.  
 Police Station, 155.  
 Polk, Pres. James K., 219.  
 Poole, William Frederick, 232.  
 Poor, Alfred, 85.  
 Porter, Gen. Moses, 228.  
 Post Office, 1, 155.  
 Pownall, Gov. Thomas, 44, 219.  
 Poynton, Capt. Thomas, 96.  
 Pratt, Bela Lyon, 174.  
 Prescott, William Hickling, 85.  
 Prince, Capt. Henry, 37, 162.  
 Rev. Dr. Thomas, 228.  
 Prison Ship, 169.  
 Proctor, John, 27.  
 Providence, 7.  
 Pudeator, Ann, 27.  
 Pue, Jonathan, 185.  
 Putnam, Alfred Porter, 151.  
 Rev. Alfred P., 228.  
 Ann, 17, 94.  
 Dr. Amos, 228.  
 Prof. Frederick W., 219.  
 Gen. Israel, 91, 230.  
 Hon. James, 230.  
 John, 92.  
 Perley, 71.  
 Judge Samuel, 160, 219, 230.

Railroad Station, 1, 155.  
Rantoul, Sen. Robert, 220, 227.  
Rauschner, 94.  
Read, Nathan, 85, 220, 228.  
Red Cross Incident, 205.  
Reed, Wilmot, 27.  
Registry of Deeds, 142.  
Revere, Paul, 74, 178.  
Revolutionary War, 31.  
Richards, Maj. John, 26.  
Richardson, Capt. William P., 40.  
Rinn, J. Philip, 157.  
Robinson, John, 125, 220.  
    Samuel, 164.  
Rogers, Dudley Pickman, 193.  
    John, 97, 220.  
Roosevelt, Pres. Franklin D., 220.  
    John, 220.  
    Pres. Theodore, 221.  
Ropes, Eliza Orne, 147.  
    Joseph, 38.  
    Mary Pickman, 147.  
    Memorial, 147.  
    Judge Nathaniel, 147, 196.  
    Sally, 148.  
Roux, Antoine, 120.  
    Francois, 120.  
    Frederic, 120.  
    Joseph, 120.  
    Louis, 122.  
    Ursula, 120.  
Ruck House, 170.  
    Thomas, 170.  
Rudhall, Abel, 184.  
Rum Shop, 163.  
Russell, Henry, Jr., 140.  
    Peter Silver, Jr., 151.  
Ryder, W. H., 182.  
  
Scarlet Letter, 14, 54, 62.  
Scott, Margaret, 27.

Scripture, Rev. James Oliver, 185.  
Sears, John H., 124.  
Seven Gables, House of the, 1-13, 45, 65.  
Sewall, Fort, 233.  
    Judge Samuel, 17, 26, 110.  
    Stephen, 27, 195.  
Shattuck, Samuel, 221.  
Shaw, Justice Lemuel, 141, 172.  
Sheffield Patent, 5.  
Sheldon, Susanna, 17.  
Sheridan, Gen. Philip H., 136, 191.  
Sherman, Gen. William T., 160, 221.  
Ship Rock, 170, 171, 232.  
Ship Tavern, 171.  
Siisbee, Francis H., 81, 125.  
    Sen. Nathaniel, 13, 119, 189, 191.  
Silsbee House, 51.  
Skelton, Rev. Samuel, 6, 221.  
Smith, Jerome H., 134.  
    Jesse, 199.  
Smith Swimming Pool, 204.  
"Snow Image," 62.  
Social Library, 150.  
Spencer, Mrs., 53.  
Spofford, Harriett Prescott, 87.  
Spring, Jacob, 230.  
Salem Athenaeum, 6.  
Salem Charitable Mechanic Assn., 192.  
Salem Country Club, 192.  
Salem Evening News, 2.  
Salem Express, 2.  
Salem Female Charitable Soey., 193.  
Salem Fraternity, 190.  
Salem Gibraltars, 99.  
Salem Gibraltar Wagon, 53.  
Salem Hospital, 152.

Salem Marine Society, 192.  
 Salem Oil & Grease Co., 4.  
 Salem Public Library, 149.  
 Salem Terminal Coal Co., 2.  
 Salem Theatre, E. M. Loew, 1,  
     159.  
 Salem Village, 16.  
 Saltonstall, Leverett, 81, 135,  
     155, 199, 221.  
     Nathaniel, 26.  
 Salvation Army, 2.  
 Sargent, John Singer, 157.  
     Peter, 26.  
     Mrs. William Denny, 194.  
 Saunders, Capt. John, 191.  
     John, 71.  
 Sawyer, Carol Ray, 123.  
 St. John's Prep School, 230.  
 St. Mary's Cemetery, 200.  
 Standley, Samuel S., 140.  
 State Teachers College, 157.  
 Stone, George C., 131.  
 Story, Justice Joseph, 15, 81, 92,  
     165, 189, 221, 234.  
     William Wetmore, 15, 92, 221.  
 Stoughton, William, 26.  
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 87.  
 Stuart, Jane, 135.  
 Sturgis, R. Clipston, 174.  
 Sun Tavern, 165.  
 Sutton, Eben Dale, 231.  
     Mrs. Eliza, 231.  
 Swinnerton, Dr. John, 64, 198.  
 Sylvania Electric Products, Inc.,  
     3.

Taft, Pres. William H., 222.  
 Tapley, Harriet Sylvester, 89.  
 Tassinari, Ettore, 183.  
 Taylor, D. Foster, 123.  
 Thayer, Rev. John, 182.  
 Thompson, Benj., Count Rumford, 222.

Thorndike, Col. Israel, 226.  
     Mrs. John H., 125.  
 Thurston, Rev. Asa, 128.  
     Mrs. Asa, 128.  
 Tituba, 18, 19.  
 Torrey, Charles T., 181.  
 Touzel, John, 184.  
 Towle, Abraham, 141.  
 Town House Square, 138, 205.  
 Town Pump, 205.  
 Treadwell, Dr. John G., 222.  
 Tucker, Gideon, 99.  
     Commodore Samuel, 234.  
 Tucker-Rice House, 50.  
 Tuckerman, Bayard, 211.  
     Dr. John Francis, 180.  
 Turner Hall, 166.  
 Turner, Ross, 214.  
 "Twice Told Tales," 60, 74.

Upham, Rev. Charles W., 81, 222.  
 Usher, Esther, 89.

#### Vessels

"America" (priv.), 42.  
 "America" (ship), 34.  
 "American Merchant," 42.  
 "Arbella" (ship), 144.  
 "Argo" (ship), 36.  
 "Astrea" (ship), 37, 162.  
 "Atlantic" (ship), 35.  
 "Aurora" (ship), 35.  
 "Belisarius" (ship), 35.  
 "Beulah" (brig), 40.  
 "Chesapeake," 162.  
 "Cleopatra's Barge" (yacht),  
     42, 171.  
 "Constitution" (frigate), 122.  
 "Dragon" (bark), 37, 40.  
 "Eliza" (ship), 37.  
 "Eliza" (ketch), 123.  
 "Essex" (frig), 42, 204.  
 "Evangeline," 69.

## Vessels

“Fanny M.” (gundalow), 123.  
 “Franklin” (ship), 36, 38.  
 “Friendship” (ship), 122.  
 “George” (ship), 37.  
 “Glide,” 42.  
 “Grand Turk” (ship), 34, 42, 116, 121.  
 “Guide,” 42.  
 “Hercules” (ship), 121.  
 “Jersey” (ship), 42.  
 “Kenilworth” (bark), 123.  
 “Lavolta” (schr.), 144.  
 “Light Horse” (bark), 34.  
 “Lucia” (ship), 35.  
 “Margaret” (ship), 36, 42, 171.  
 “Mindoro” (ship), 41.  
 “Mount Vernon” (ship), 42, 171.  
 “Nabby” (brig), 57.  
 “Quonnapowatt” (schr.), 123.  
 “Rajah” (schr.), 37.  
 “Recovery” (ship), 38, 171.  
 “Red Jacket” (ship), 123.  
 “Restitution” (ship), 36.  
 “St. Paul” (ship), 37.  
 “Sally” (brig), 36.  
 “Shannon,” 162.  
 “Taria Topan,” 42.  
 “Tybee” (ship), 40.  
 Vaughan, Mrs. Henry Goodwin, 100.  
 Vaughan Doll and Toy Collection, 95.  
 Very, Jones, 87, 223, 232.  
 Victoria, Queen, 231.  
 Voorhees, Chester F., 89.  
 Wadsworth Burying Ground, 231.  
 Walcott, Mary, 17, 178.

Ward, Lt. Charles G., 191.  
 Gen. Frederick T., 86, 91, 94, 199, 223.  
 John, 45.  
 John, house, 99, 109, 171.  
 Joshua, 172.  
 Joshua, house, 171.  
 Miles, 172.  
 Miles, house, 61, 161, 172.  
 Wardwell, Samuel, 27.  
 Warren, Mary, 17.  
 Warville, Brissot de, 163.  
 Washington, Pres., 44, 223.  
 Washington Hall, 158.  
 Watch House, 205.  
 Waters, Henry Fitz-Gilbert, 85.  
 Capt. Joseph, 204.  
 Webb, Capt. Benjamin, 36, 164.  
 Hon. Stephen P., 211.  
 Webster Sen. Daniel, 191, 221, 224, 226.  
 Col. Daniel Fletcher, 224.  
 Weld, Dr. Charles Goddard, 115, 129, 131.  
 West, Capt. Ebenezer, 35.  
 Capt. Nathaniel, 171.  
 Wheatland, Dr. Henry, 81, 90, 212.  
 White, Judge Alden P., 174.  
 Daniel A., 81.  
 Whittier, John G., 87, 181, 229.  
 Wildes, Sarah, 27.  
 Willard, John, 27.  
 William III, King, 10.  
 Williams, Abigail, 17.  
 Lt. Charles F., 191.  
 Roger, Rev., 7, 178, 224.  
 Willows, 202.  
 Willson, Edmund B., 179.  
 Martha Buttrick, 179.  
 Wilson, Pres. Woodrow, 225.  
 Winter Island, 7, 204.  
 Winter Id. Lighthouse, 205.

Winter, William, 87.  
Winthrop, Henry, 225.  
    Gov. John, 9, 143.  
    Wait, 26.  
Witchcraft, 9-16.  
Witchcraft Jail, 152.  
Witch House, 45.  
Withington, Lothrop, 85.  
Wood, David, 103.  
Woodbury, George E., 87.  
    John, 177, 225.

Women's Friend Socy., 194.  
Worcester, Joseph E., 60, 225.  
    Rev. Samuel, 170, 187.  
    Rev. Samuel M., 187.  
**Y**oung, J. Harvey, 134.  
Young Men's Catholic Temperance Soc., 195.  
Young Men's Christian Assn., 195.  
Young Women's Assn., 195.





3 6234 00161066 9

POST CARDS in colors . . . . . 5 cents each

PHOTOGRAPHIC POST CARDS of portraits in  
the Essex Institute collections . . . . . 15 cents each

POST CARDS printed in Sepia, of Salem Ships  
Fifty subjects . . . . . 3 cents each

HELIOTYPE CARDS . . . . . 5 cents each

PHOTOGRAPHIC POST CARDS of Pingree and  
Peirce-Nichols houses . . . . . 2 for 15 cents

ETCHINGS of Historical Points of Interest in Salem  
and Vicinity . . . . . 25 cents each

PHOTOGRAPHS of Portraits, Architecture,  
Museum Objects in the Essex Institute . . . . . 8 x 10 in. \$1.00  
A large collection . . . . . 5 x 7 in. 50 cents

*Publications of the Essex Institute include Biography,  
Ethnology, Genealogy, History, Shipping,  
Vital Records and Miscellaneous.*

SEND FOR CATALOGUE

Address

THE ESSEX INSTITUTE, SALEM, MASS.

VISITOR'S  
GUIDE TO  
SALEM